

EROMENA, OR, Love and Revenge.

Written originally in the Thoscan tongue,

BY
CAVALIER
GIO. FRANCESCO BIONDI,
Gentleman extraordinary of his MAJESTIES
PRIVIE CHAMBER.

Divided into six Books.

And now faithfully Englished,

By I. A. HAYWARD, of Graies-
Inne Gent.



LONDON,

Printed by Richard Badger, for Robert Allot, and are to
be sold at his Shop in PAULS Church-yard, at the
signe of the Beare. 1632.

EROMENA

OR

Love and Revenge

Written originally in the Italian tongue,

BY

CALVIER

GIO. FRANCESCO BIONDI

Gentleman extraordinary of his Majesty

His Privie Chamber

Divided into six Books.

And now faithfully Englished,

By I. A. HARRARD, of Gravel

June 1635



LONDON

Printed by Richard Baskett, for Robert Allen, and sold
at his shop in Pav's Church-yard, at the
sign of the hand. 1635.



TO
**THE NO LESSE
SINGVLAR FOR
VERTVE, THAN EMI-
NENT FOR HONOUR,**

The Excellently worthy, and worthily

Right Excellent *Princesse*, The Lady

FRANCIS,

Dutcheffe Dowager of

RICHMOND

and

LENOX.

Illustrious and Right Noble MADAME;



WO special reasons embolden, or rather oblige mee to expose this Translation to the common view; under your *Gracious* patronage; The one is, because its Originall was by the Authour composed at the command of that *Worthy Pillar* of this State, your deceased *Duke* of blest memory, under whose princely tutelage it also boldly presented it self to the public eye, so as it was chiefly beholding to that renowned *Peere* for both it's life and being: The other, that this *Ero-mena*, though a *Princesse*, yet necessitated (for being an alien borne) to implore a protection in this Monarchall

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

Ile; comes now, as well to expresse to your *Grace* the greatnesse of her obligation to the *honoured* memory of that *noble Peere*, for having so courteously protected her in *Italy*, as also to sue for and request the further continuance of a like favour (here in this Ile) at the hands of your *Illustrious Grace*, who are the now remaining part of that divinely composed *piece of Excellency*, whereof he was the residue; which (considering your known noble demerits, and princely courtesie) shee hopes to obtaine, for that fame hath assured her, that your *Grace* is as well a *Patronesse of Vertue*, as patterne of *Honour*, especially finding them so innately habituell, and so constantly permanent in that Sex, and therewithall in a *Princesse*, their choifest seat of residence: Vouchsafe then (*Right Excellent Lady*) that my obligation to obey so meriting a *Princesse*, may excuse my boldnesse in ushering her *Excellencie* in reall perfections so *excelling*, into so *excellent* a presence as that of your *Graces*; Where with all submissive and reverent respects I leave her to apologize (as I am perswaded her no way defective heroricall goodnesse will) in excuse of my necessitated boldnesse; whilst I (wishing that she prove as capable and fortunate, as (I am confident) she is both desirous and zealous to manifest her two-fold obligation to so *highly-deserving a Patronesse*) with your gracious benigne permission, submissively kissing your *Princely* hands, with all respective humblenesse retire my selfe.

Your Graces

most humbly devoted

in all dutifull observance

JAMES HAYWARD.

THE
TRANSLATOR

to the understandingly judicious
READER.



Tript now of her Italian vail, presents her selfe to thy view Cavilier Biondi his Eromena, being the first volume of his works, highly esteemed in Italy, among the choisest pieces of that nature; as well for the good liking which that Nation beares to that pleasing way of Helidorian Poesie (I mean an historicall way of Poetizing, or Poeticall manner of historizing, or displaying of the fained-seeming unfained adventures and actions of persons reall, masked under the vizard of invented names:) As also for the Authours peculiar way of imbellishing it more frequently with Ethicall solidity, than superficiall Rhetorick; which gained so much on the Italian humour, as it induced divers of that Nobility to procure him to second it (as sithence he hath done) with another Tome, called Donzella Desterrada, so adorned with elevated grave conceits, and variety of strange (though aptly enterlaced) occurrences, that their desire being thereby rather exceedingly augmented, than (in the least measure) satisfied, incited them by (then more than ever) earnest solicitations to re-importune him to close up what in these two remained unfinished, with a third and finall Volume; which the Authour (loth to disoblige so many deserving and noble personages) is now (some while sithence) in hand withall, having in it's infancy named it, Il Coralbo, being (for the better suiting with his yeares) the graver of the three; so as he intends not to shew thee the way of pulling by the Curtaine from before the persons in his former pieces represented, untill he hath withdrawn his now well-nigh wearied pensill from his, as yet, little more than halfe pourtraied Coralbo.

Meane time, if thy liking sympathize any whit with that of the Italians, I may then hope for thy gentle approvement of having imployed some vacant houres in translating this piece, which, indeed, might well have merited an abler Pen, and in that kinde of imployment more versed than mine; though I would not willingly (for all that) be taken (or rather mistaken) for a Dictionary-tutred Linguist; but rather the meanest proficient among those, whose Genius (in their lesse experienced yeares) never either rounded them in the care with that French Adage, La pierre sovent remuée n'amasse pas volontiers mousse; Mousse seldome doth infold that stone that's often rowl'd. Or was ever so providently cautelous

To the R E A D E R.

celous, as to admonish them, that the securest surveying of Transmarine territories was in a Map in ones Chamber; and the safest conversing with Transalpinan Transalpeninan, or other remoter Nations, was by discoursing privately in ones study with Rawleigh, Sands, Villamont, Maierne, &c. Whereunto seemeth to allude that of Martial,

Æthereas lascive cupis volitare per auras ?

I, fuge, sed poteras tutior esse domi.

Hast thou a longing gadding vein
throughout the world to rome ?

Goe, post away; yet know, thou mightst
have liv'd more safe at home.

But suffred their greener youth to be swaied by an innate and unresistable desire of going themselves (more superfluously curious, thou wilt say, than judiciously considerate) to search after such out-landish flowers as best liked their fancy, & having found to gather & crop them off their proper stems, where they naturally grew (for doubt of receiving them at a second hand withered, vertuelesse, or adulterate) though necessitated for arriving at them, to force a passage through many a bushie brake, and thorny thicket, besides the often hazarding the pricking of their fingers to the quick, in reaching at them, so fenced and entertwined with sharp-pointed brambles, and smart-stinging briers; Howbeit, thou maist hereafter expect a participation of the gleanings of some of them, not much perhaps declined from their native beauty, odor, and vertue: For the sooner accomplishing whereof, it shall prove no slender encouragement to have prevailed so farre with thy courtesie, as that the acknowledgement of my being sensible of my own inability may be accepted in excuse of my not voluntary undergoing (by the Authours assent and privity) the burthen of this Translation, more for the satisfaction of some noble Friends of mine, (if the weaknesse of my deserts, supported onely with a desire of honouring merit in the proper sphere, where it both resides and moves, may presume so to terme them) than for any over-weaning confidence I ever durst repose in my own far short sufficiencie, or rather selfe-conscious insufficiency of being able to accord the far discording strings of two so different languages. Yet if this cannot satisfie thee whom I have stiled, an Understandingly judicious Reader (than whom, I know no other fit for either my judge or censurer) doe thou then but ease me of a labour (which I doubt will be imposed on my unwillingnesse) in translating his Donzella desterrada; which (perhaps) ere thou hast brought to a finall period, will give thee cause to entertain a milder opinion of the no lesse well-meaning than unwilling employment of my as yet bashfull maiden Pen, in a task of this kinde not the easiest; on whose behalfe I dare yet confidently (and that without presumption too) averre the same to be, though (in respect of my not yet fully renew'd acquaintaunce with my native tongue) not elegantly; yet (by the furtherance of my twice two Summers assiduall conversing with that Nation at their native home) faithfully (not paraphrased, but) translated. Seeing that I have (as oft as they would endure the being new

cast

To the READER.

cast in an English mould) used the Authours own words, rarely ever (unconstrained) varied any phrase of his, and never I am sure strayed beyond the limits of either his matter or meaning; wherein (upon the importunity of some deserving spirits) I have been the more charily observant, to the end, that such as desire to make that (no lesse pleasing than stately) language their own, might, without any great difficulty to their (as I presume thou wilt confesse) no small furtherance in that study, master this Originall, for depth of language not inferiour to the best I ever yet saw publisht by any of that nation; For which, as I expect not the least stroaking of applause (it being no other than a recreative imployment, or rather but the immature fruit of some spare houres, stolen from the Orchard of reputation) so feare I not the ghastriest frowne of censure, knowing that the scope of these mine (how slender soever) endeavours, aime no lesse at their profit than delight, from which, lest I detain them too long, I bid thee and them, Farewell.

YET e're thou passe, a word, and that's but this,
Think not all's mine that here thou find'st amisse.

The Plot and Authours way may chance come short
 Of pleasing all; if so, then blame him for't;

Suffice it me to expresse him in our tongue,

And neither doe his Muse nor meaning wrong;

Since to th'Interpreter 'tis held a blemish,

To change or adde, no lesse than to diminish.

If language thou expects, then pore not here,

But Sidney read, whose Pen ne're yet found peere.

Some faults here may prove mine, that Ile confesse;

Yet load not me with th'errours of the Presse.

Man's apt to erre; and many a first edition,

For it's escapes pleads Custome and Tradition;

And so must this, since, *What's once done and ended,*

Can ne're by after-view be well amended.

To quote all scapes might wrong thy patience; then

Correct but these more grosse ones with thy Pen;

The sense will help thee give the rest their due

Meaning, and order both.

Once more, Adieu.

E R R A T A.

[N pagina 2. linea 3. for became, read, and become. p. 5. l. 20. for seemes, read, seemes unto you. p. 7. l. 4. for my, read if my. p. 25. l. 27. for setting, read setling. p. 25. l. 46. for honour, read house. p. 34. l. 38. for wayed, read weying. p. 45. l. 30. for commending, read commanding. p. 47. l. 16. for houses, read houshold. p. 55. l. 32. for time, read tune. p. 55. l. last, for disaaine, read destiny. p. 61. l. 46. for chiefe, read choise. p. 62. l. 40. for him, read them. p. 74. l. 3. for put in, read put in for. p. 83. l. 26. for at, read an. p. 84. l. 3. for curious, read courteous. p. 89. l. 20. for leaving, read leavying. p. 94. l. 32. for he, r. his. p. 96. l. 34. for experienced, r. unexperienced. p. 98. l. 11. for force, r. forces. p. 104. l. 20. for turning, r. stirring. p. 107. l. 5. for digested, r. digested. p. 129. l. 21. for out of, r. out to. p. 131. l. last, for effects, r. affects. p. 132. l. 1. for word, r. ward. p. 136. l. 15. for respects, r. effects. p. 144. l. 17. for their, r. third. p. 147. l. 17. for well, r. wall. p. 148. l. 3. for in, r. on. p. 157. l. 8. for for, r. farre. p. 158. l. 16. for meane, r. moane. p. 177. l. 8. for excuse, r. exclusive. p. 192. l. 16. for his, r. her.

To

The Authors Epistle Dedicatorie.



To the most Illustrious and right Excellent,
my most honoured Lord and Patron,
The Lord Duke of
RICHMOND and LENOX,
Earle of
DARNLEY, &c.

Most Illustrious and right Excellent Lord,



Have brought forth to breathe the common
aire this *Eromena*, at the commandment of a
Lady, who (pretending to have over mee
the soveraignty of an absolute Comman-
dresse) straightly requires at my hands, a devoutly-obe-
dient, strict, and sudden performance of her imperious
and not to be questioned commands. If she prove imper-
fect, she is the more excusable for being no naturall birth,
but an abortive of a few moneths time, accidentally con-
ceived without any hope ever to have breath'd. And now
I am constrained to dedicate her (thus unpolish'd) unto
your *Excellencie*, before whom shee ought (indeed) to
have appeared as richly endowed with ornaments, as you
are with vertues. Vouchsafe (I beseech you) to accept, in
excuse of my boldnesse, the necessity of my obedience,
by receiving this *Princesse* into your courteous protection,
that you may behold in her the conformity she hath with
your *Excellencie* in nobility and valour, but (above all)
in an eternall constancie, whereby as shee grew to bee
peerlesse among all the Ladies of her time, so makes it
also your *Excellencie* become singular among all the Cava-
liers of this our age. The Lord God grant your *Excellencie*
all increase of felicitie, whilst I, with reverend affection,
humbly kisse your hand.

*Your Excellencies most humble
and most devoted Servant,*
Gio. Francesco Biondi.

To his worthy good Friend,
Mr. JAMES HAYWARD,
upon his Translation of **EROMENA**
out of the *Italian*.

T Here is a sort of people use to be
Most captious, though of least capacity,
Who when, as almost still, they meet with Strains
Too high and lofty for their stupid braines,
They say, they see no wit in't; good cause why,
Tis too far distant from the purblinde eye
Of their dull knowledge; whence it comes they sleight
All that they cannot understand aright.
I hate their humour; yet not so that I
Should onely on meere contrariety
Praise all I apprehend not. Friend, your Book,
(Although I partly ghesse what pains you took
To gain the Language, how the Seas you crost,
What time, what travell, and what coyne it cost)
Yet dare I not commend, unlesse I were
A perfect Linguist, and a Traveller;
For to thy censure is requir'd more art
Than conning of some Dictionary by heart,
Or an Italian Grammar: he must sweat,
And coole again, fare hard, endure the heat
Of forreigne Climats; and, whats ten times worse,
Humour each people, keep an open purse,
And a close heart, passe through such misery,
You'd rather think his work well done, than try
How he came by his knowledge: 'twill suffice
The man that can consider, and is wise
Enough to know the motive to his pains
Was not vain-glory, nor the hop'd-for gains
Of praise, or profit; nor to merit thanks
From some great Lord his Patron: Mountebanks
Of art there are, whose aymes be these; but he
Disclaims such basenesse, shames to Poetic.

His

His end is onely that he may delight
 His Reader, shewing how th' Italians write,
 And what their fancies are: Nor doth his wit
 Seek out some Satyre to translate, lest it
 Should nip our vices of the newest fashion,
 So neare, that some might think 'twere no translation:
 Nor covets he that to the world be known,
 He hath a Muse or Genius of his own
 Can teach his Pen a method: and for stufte,
 His Travells might afford tales strange enough
 To please the times with; but his wiser brain,
 Gives to your censure first a Strangers vein;
 So a Translatours name may faults excuse
 Not of his own, but of anothers Muse,
 If there be any: for, who knows the tongue,
 May see he hath not done his Author wrong;
 But rather how th' Italian he refines
 In these his smother and more polisht lines.
 Yet in the Authors praise, whom I nor know,
 Nor understand, thus far Ile dare to goe,
 Knowing our Translatours judgement to be such,
 I dare presume he likewise merits much;
 For had his work not been a piece well writ,
 'T had known no language but Italian yet.

THOMAS SALUSBURY.
Ex Templo interiori Ar.

To my worthily esteemed Friend,
 M^r. JAMES HAYWARD,
 upon his Translation of Eromena *ἑρασμον.*

FAire Eromena in her Thoscan tyre,
 I view'd, & lik'd the fashion wondrous well;
 But in this change of habit I admire,
 That still in her the same perfections dwell:
 So have I seen Transalpin grafts to grow,
 And beare rare fruit, remov'd to Thames from Po.

A l'istesso.

Fl'Eromena parto felice
Del' alto intendimento di Biondo,
Et girava parte del mondo
Si tosto quasi che vidde luce.

In Inghilterra nacque, mandata
Dipoi a * l' alma città donzella
Picciolina nelle fascie, ella
Diventò tutta Italianata.

Il virtuoso Haüardo la trouava,
Et l' ha fatto parlar buon Inglese,
Maternella lingua del paese,
Dove che primá l' aria spirava.

I A. H O V V E L L, *Arm.*

To his much honoured Friend,
M^r. J A M E S H A Y V V A R D,
upon his Translation of E R O M E N A.

S Pare minuts thus spent (most accomplisht Friend)
Much should I erre shold I not much commend;
For thy retired houres, (by prooffe) I know,
Thou in more serious studies dost bestow,
As Engin, Stratagem, Fortification,
Meanes to extend the confines of a Nation;
In which as judgement doth already crown thee;
Imployment in the future may renown thee;
Since in the Mathematick Art (I meane
Those parts most usefull, and whence we may gleane
An Enginiers perfection) I know none,
In Theorick and Praëtick hath out-gone
Thee for thy time. On then in thy progresse,
As for thine own thy Countries good no lesse;
Nor hast thou of thy travells made that use

Which

* Veneria.

Which many doe , to bring home the abuse
 Of Forreigne Climes, their complement, their fashion,
 Nor their known vice, t' infect thy home and nation;
 Thy purpose and thy practise was not such,
 For thy endeavours have not been so much
 To see as know: for neither hast thou pierc't
 France to attain her garb, but to be vers't
 In her best *Dialect*; nor *Almaigne* known,
 To make their healthing, not their tongue thine own:
 Thee thine approved *Temperance* hath taught
 The *Teutons* lofty language, not deep draught;
 And to thy minde gave a more pleasing gust
 The *Thoscans* stately strain than lothsome lust:
 Of these thy waies I cannot but approve,
 Both 'cause I know them, and because I love
 To see thee constant in them; doe but then
 Impart thy *Talent* to thy Countrymen,
 By culling out the choisest *Forreigne* flowers,
 To plant in *English* soil and make them ours.

A l' istesso sopra l' istessa Translatione.

Dell' Eromena le vaghe bellezze
 Mirai in Italia con occhio gradito;
 E veggolla adesso con l' istesse bellezze
 In tutte le sue parti: solamente 'l vestito
 Parmi cangiato; Benche per ricchezze
 Non é manco al presente ch' alhor á compito.
 Mercé'l Haüardo diligente & cortese
 Che così garbata la vesti a l' Inglese.

I. G. Ar.

To his selected Friend,
MR JAMES HAYWARD
 upon his Translation of EROMENA.

What? laid aside thy *Compass*? from whose use
 No *Art* could wean thee or thy constant *Muse*?
 Or with the *Circle* art thou fallen at *Square*?
 Cause thy *Direct* and *Perpendicular*

Lines

*Lines want their due inployment, that I see
 Thee practise language for Geometrie;
 No, th'are thy Passatempors fruits, and they
 Tasted by a judicious palat may
 Have a good relish; and deserve (though so)
 More praise than a more serious piece, and moe
 Than Ile conferre upon thee; yet I owe
 Something unto thy gratefulnesse, that thou,
 Having by *Eromena's* proper file
 Bin polisht to the choifest *Toscan* stile,
 Hast in the way of friendly commutation,
 Taught her the language of our *English* nation.*

All'istesso.

*L'Atiera Eromena d'addobbare
 Con vestimenti à par lei pari
 Non bastano gl'ingegni ordinari
 Versati fuorch' in un' particolare,
 Má chi in fatti d'arme esquisito
 Destro nel cavalcar e' navigare,
 Ancò esperto nel fortificare,
 Ed in scienze altre è compito,
 Alui di giure appartien l'honore
 Armar Heroice spalle coll' arnese
 Tutt' imbellito di lavor Inglese;
 Donque ardisco dir al tuo favore,
 Di guerriera degna tu guerriero
 Degno sei degno esser sol' scudiero.*

At yr unrhiw.

*H Awd dardllhen dalen liw dydd, halodd siarad
 Halodd siwrneio glenydd,
 Dy: iaith bod yn ieithydd
 Gorchwyl faith gorchest y fydd.*

*THO. REVELL,
 Ex hospitio Graii, Gen.*

CAVALIER



CAVALIER GIO:FRANCESCO BIONDI HIS EROMENA

The First Booke.



Attalampo King of *Mauritania*, had by his wife *Algidosia* (the *Numidian* Kings daughter) a goodly, though too too numerous a progenie; Because the law of birthright (in that kingdome inviolable) was not liberall to yonger brothers, of other patrimony, than sword and horse. The youngest among them, was a babe of exquisite beauty, to whom together with perfections of body, nature was bountifull of those vertues of the minde, which best be-seemed a well-meriting Prince. *Polimero* (for so was he called) in growth prevented his yeares, and in knowledge and discretion the age of discretion; so as (though a child) he knew already what it imported him to be last borne, and what it was to bee a yonger Brother: Whereof although his naturall generosity made him in some sort carelesse, yet the same influence that gave him a great spirit, made him also pensive in finding out the meanes, how he might with vertue ore-match destiny; and by making himselfe the forget of his owne fortunes, verifie, that *the Wise man rules the starres*; his nature then being equaliz'd with an education conformable, induced his Parents (allured with the splendor of so many graces) to dote on him as a creature singular, in whom the heavens had (with extraor-

dinary partiality placed all these good gifts, which they ordinarily vsed to share among many. *Metaneone* the eldest brother (observing this their inclination, became iealous thereof) began so deeply to hate *Polimero*, that he (borne to endure rather any misfortune, than domestike hatred) purposed (though not as then arived to sixteen yeeres of age) to leave the countrey; and the effect had accompanied his deliberation, had not the reverence which he owed his father, perswaded him to a discreet dissimulation thereof.

It hapned that the *Queene of Ireland*, *Catalampo's* sister, (by relation enamored of the towardlinesse of her Nephew) sent him some pretious gifts, and among those two Irish Greyhounds, of the goodliest, and best, that were in her kingdome: *Polimero* desirous to try them, commanded, that a Lion and Leopard should be led out of the den of the Lions, into an inclosure, neere the kings Quiry, railed in with pales for such like baitings; which was no sooner performed, but that the Prince came unexpectedly thither. *Polimero* (courteously and affectionately entertaining him, and leaning on the gallery with him,) caused one of the Greyhounds to be led in, together with the Lion. The dogge, as soone as hee saw the sauage beast, slipt eagerly off, with a great leape. The Lion (lashing himselfe with his rayle) went on to encounter him; th' other (as if hee had beene accustomed (all his life time) to wrestle with such like beasts) seeing the fierce beast make stealing-wise towards him, flung himselfe furiously on him, and with his fore feet keeping down his arm'd pawes, pinch'd him in the eye, with so terrible a shake, that the Lion (not able to recover from under him, orecome with an extreame convulsion) was constrained to forsake himselfe. If the wonder of the Prince was great, greater yet was the content of *Polimero*, who (having caused the railes to be removed away) willed that th' other Greyhound should be led in, with the Leopard. This dogge (as if hee envied his fellow) to shun the disadvantageous dexterity of his enemy, encountered so furiously in the aire, that he shook his backe against the ground, and ere he could get up againe, (seazing on his shoulder) tore it there off his body with such facility, that an hatchet could not have done it more neatly. The Prince (well pleased with the fiercenesse of the Greyhounds, and desirous to have them) could not satisfie himselfe in commending them, which *Polimero* observing, profered them unto him, and praying him to accept of them, the Prince said, *Infante Polimero*, I will not accept them as a gift, If I have them at all, I will owe fortune for them: choose you out of my stable two steeds, such as like you best; those I will play against your doggs at such a game as we shall agree on. *Polimero* perceiving that his gifts (moerely for illwill's sake) were not accepted, and that (by law of inferiority) it behooved him to accept the proposition, replied, My Lord, sithence that you will not vouchsafe me this favour that the doggs be immediatly yours, as I am, I cannot but obey you; But two horses are too much for a couple of doggs, It

It shall suffice me (so you be therewith contented) to choose out for my selfe onely *Flammauro*. (This was a horse kept in the stable as a thing excellent, whom never any man till then was able throughly to tame; though he had already dismounted and kild above twenty Knights: all which *Polimero* knew well, and perswaded himselfe that (in winning this steede) he might content himselfe without discontenting his brother; confident withall that himselfe alone was able to tame him.)

The Prince therewith contented, the wager was agreed on, but not the game, whereof many (that were disliked of) were proposed. *Metaneone* would have it be three carrieres at the Ring; when Impatient to stay the saddling of the horses, he saw (as he passed through *Polimero's* hall) some foiles and blunt swords to fence withall; whereupon (his minde being altered) he said, *Infante*, Let him of us twaine lose his wager, that shall with these foyles receive the first foine of th' other. Be it as it please you (My LORD) answered *Polimero*; On this each of them having taken one, the Prince advanced himselfe forwards, making with his point towards the others face, and faining a passage (by stamping on the ground with his right foote) stood still, expecting his advantage. *Polimero* (who well knew what opinion the Prince had of himselfe) making a shew of fearing him, stood close in his guard, forbidding him entrance; The Prince (thinking to dazle him) and so put him from his ward) fained at him divers toynes, but with so little Iudgement, that the *Infante* (seeing him lye open) touched at two thrusts his nose and hat. But the Prince loth to acknowledge himselfe the looser (every one crying out, that such thrusts could never have drawne blood, because they had not made any signe or impression in the clothes) and continuing in striking at *Polimero*, who warding his blowes, and standing in a steddye guard, with his point received the Prince in the midst of his breast (as he advanced forwards with a steppe:) who thereupon, all in a chafe threw away the foyle, and (confessing to have lost) bade leade forth the horse. The *Infante* (seeing him in so fiery a mood) said unto him, My LORD; since that it hath pleased you, to let me winne, that so you might bestow on me your steed, I beseech you to favour me in accepting the Greyhounds: (which the Prince refusing) they descended the staires into the Court of the Quiry where they saw come the horse with his spectacles and covering, (which taken from him) he remained naked so well shapen and exquisitely proportioned, as that *Apelles* (though he had borrowed the perfections of all the horses in the world) could never have painted one more perfect. *Flammauro* (seeing himselfe at liberty) made no more esteeme of his bridle, than if it had beene a small thread, and giving a bustling shake (wherewith he threw to the ground the two horsemen that held him) after hee had many times raised himselfe in the ayre, tooke a full carriere towards the Prince, so swift, as he gave him no time to save himselfe: for rushing in among the throng of Courtiers, and (trampling down many of them, shrewdly maimed) he then

(wheeling about,) bore downe the Prince himselfe, who desirous to revenge his fall cried, Kill him, kill him. Every man with sword in hand strove to obey him. But the fierce courser (like a skilfull fencer) kept them aloofe off; untill upon the appearing of some lances (as if he had knowen that his hurt could not be redressed by defence) he then quietly (laying aside all fiercenesse) drew neere *Polimero*. Who (taking him gently by the reines, and turning towards the Prince) said: I beseech your highnesse, seeing (through the favour of the gods) you have received no hurt, to grant life to this faire beast for my sake. I will not, (answered irefully the Prince) but will, that hee dye. Vpon this every man strove who should be formost to come to strike him, which *Polimero* perceiving to be done in scorne of him, and not being able to endure it, lightly vaulted on the courser, and galloping a maine speede out of the Quirie entred into the Kings stables, where (finding by chance the chiefe rider) he deliuered the horse into his charge, as a speciall steed of the Kings; denouncing him his Maiesties indignation, if he permitted any one (not excepting any man breathing) to lay hands on him. The rider) astonished to see one of the Kings sonnes come riding on such a horse, imagining that the exception comprehended no ordinary persons) answered, that he would obey him, and besought him to send for those horsemen, that were accustomed to governe him, whereto the *Infante* would not consent, but caused him to put the horse (now grown to be gentle) into a good place of standing. The Prince (in the meane time having understood whither the *Infante* was gone,) stood a good while doubtfull whether hee should pursue him or no, but pride and disdain boyling within him, he returned to the palace.

Some there were in that very instant, that acquainted the King of these passages, who made as though he knew nothing thereof, expecting at the houre of dinner the comming of his sonnes (according to the accustomed manner) but observing *Polimero's* roome void, and inquiring for him of one of his servants (come thither expressly for that purpose) hee was answered, that he was in his withdrawing chamber, (come newly from abroad, somewhat hot and weary) but that he was well, and desired (with his Maiesties good leave) to dine alone.

The King (attentively looking on the Prince) perceived his colour altered. In the meane time, *Polimero* returned from the Kings stables, and (reasoning with himselfe upon the matter) was visited unawares by his governour the Count of Bona, who told him how the Prince (as hee returned towards the palace) had rashly let slip that the death of some body should redceme the life of the horse; and therefore besought him to be circumspect, and for a few daies to retire himselfe to (a countrey palace of the Queens cald) *Poggio*; Because he beleevved that these words aimed at no man but him.

The *Infante* (seeing the businesse fall out worse than hee imagined, making shew of embracing his aduice) resolved to depart for good

good and all, and (taking leave of him) caused to be called unto him *Carasio*. (This *Carasio* was a squire given him by his father, who (having served him from his cradle) besides that he was by nature loyall, so deerely loved him, as he judged that he could not trust any other more faithfull and more loving.) Wherefore he said unto him.

Carasio, You see on what tearmes I stand with the Prince my brother. I am resolved to give fortune place. Only two things grieve me, the one is that I must part without the consent of my Sovereigne the King, and my Mother; the other, that I have not as yet received the order of Knighthood; But now necessity must excuse me in the one, and assist me in the other; See that those armes which we over-saw some daies agoe be put in a readinesse, with that little monny that I have, and such jewels as you thinke may best stead, and lesse comber me. Choose you out for your selfe one of my steeds, the best in the stable; for me, I will have no other, than that fatall cause of my exile. And as *Carasio* would have said something, *Polimero* (interrupting him) replied; I know what you would say, It greeves you that I part, in respect of the discontent my father will conceive there-from. It seems that my resolution is rash and overhasty not (having beene advised thereon) proceeding (as you believe from some childish disposition. But know: that if I part not, my stay will occasion heavier discontents. I choose my departure as the lesser evill; many moneths sithence have I thought thereon, my resolution is neither suddaine nor childish, but grounded on manifest tokens of the hate of my brother, who will doe me all the hurt he may, during my fathers life, and after his death all the mischief he please; I therefore (being of age to discerne and know my owne danger) were very simple if want of yeeres should hinder me to eschew it. My father I will satisfie, (not with my presence, because I may not) but by my letters, and much more with my actions. Here is not any patrimony for me: we are to many brothers, my selfe the yongest of all, and not like to enioy othe eportion than my brothers hatred; my fathers love should not make me hope for any thing, who (being aged) must by course of nature dye shortly; and he once gone, who will protect me against such an one, as is naturally inclined to tyrannize over me: and beleeveth, that the deceitfull love of the vulgar should edge me on to cause him leade a life full of misery and suspicion: Fortune (*Carasio*) is a woman, and consequently a lover of youth, seeing therefore, I cannot abide here, it behoves me (the younger the better) to seeke her, find her out and retaine her.

To waite irresolutely for time, is but to lose time, and to bring ones selfe to such a passe as he can never amend the error of time. And though I were not in such danger as I am, yet must I goe get my selfe a patrimony elsewhere, since that the spite of fortune made me bee borne last, and the rigor of the law makes mee (for being borne such) poore and miserable. Ther's none can deny, but that I doe well; aswell, to avoid contentions with my brother (wherein

I cannot choose but loose) as also, to take away the occasion of many vexations of the King my Father, whom I should not grieve.

I will hence to Ireland to my Aunt, and then I will thinke on my journey as occasion shall require. See you dispatch all things this day in any wise, and prepare this evening a ship, the first that sets out of the haven. For I am most resolute that the Sunne shall not eye me to morrow in *Birsa*.

Carasio (having heard his LORDS irrepliable reasons,) without any more adoe went to the haven, where (finding a ship of *Sardigna* with hoised up sailes, and understanding that there blew a faire gale, and that she would part about the first watch) he having agreed with the mariners for their passage, acquainted therewith *Polimero*, who (causing *Flammauro* to be led forth) mounted on him, and (having awhile gently mananged him without finding him any way disobedient to the great amazement of all those that had formerly seene him very capritious) fayning to goe recreate himselfe to *Poggio de gli Olivi*, a palace of the Queene his Mother, gave order publikly to *Carasio* to come thither to him with the furniture of his chamber. Got out of the City, (and fetching a great compasse) he return'd againe at night, and (finding *Carasio* in the place appointed) went aboard the shippe, who having waied up her anchors, hoyst up her sailes before a pleasant and gentle gale of winde.

As soone as the King had dined, he sent secretly a Gentleman of his chamber to spie for *Polimero*, and (understanding what order he had given *Carasio*) was thereof well pleased, imagining that by that meanes he might avoide occasion of new broiles; And lest the Prince should resolve to pursue him (wroth perhaps that his brother went away triumphant with the horse escaped from his anger) he entertained him all that day in counsell. The day following came to court the housekeeper of *Poggio*; who (seene of the King and questioned of the cause of his comming to the City, whilest he ought to have beene an assistant in the service of the *Infante Polimero*) answered; He was come for some service of the house: And that as touching the *Infante Polimero*, he understood not his Maiesties meaning.

How, understandest thou me not? (replied the King) what I would tell thee is; that, when any of my sonnes come to *Poggio*, thou depart not thence, but serve them as cause shall require. Even so doe I, my Leige, (answered the housekeeper) and acknowledge my selfe blame-worthy if I did otherwise: But, my Lord, the *Infante Polimero* is not at *Poggio*. How? is he not there, (said the King very angrily) and having espied the Gentleman that had told him he was gone thither, he said; Did you not tell me that *Polimero* was gone to *Poggio*? I did so, my Liege (answered the Gentleman) citing with that his authors, who were some of the *Infante's* servants there present, who joyntly protested that they saw him mount on horseback, and that he would not suffer any man come with him, but gave order

der to *Carasio* to bring (that night to *Poggio*) the furniture of his chamber: The keeper (amazed at so many affirmations) turning towards the King

My dread Sovereigne (said he) my Lord the *Infante Palmyra* parted yesterday in the evening to goe to *Poggio*, I know not where he may be; he came not the last evening, nor this last night, much lesse this morning; for I dined there, neither is it above an houre since I parted thence. The King (fixing his eyes on the table) knew not what to imagine, he thought first hee might be gone to his uncle in *Numidia*, but that seemed impossible; considering the discommodity of the journey because of the sands: it being not likely he would undergoe that journey secretly with so much danger, and besides he would have feared to be pursued and overtane.

Afterwards (reasoning on the old desires he had to travell) even in that also appeared difficulty, being he could not doe it, without a great provision of monies: But (the remembrance of his sister the *Queene of Ireland* come into his fancy) he imagined that for certaine, he was imbarqued to goe to her, and therefore commanded to see what manner of shipping had set out of the Port that night, and whither they went; and from whence they were: but finding that there parted no other than a ship of *Sardagna*, he remained more confused than before, not judging it a thing likely that he was gone for *Sardagna*, but that the ship had rather taken the course of the straight of *Hercules*, supposing that they could not reach land in *Sardagna*, because of the warres, (which he knew to be there very hot) Inveloped with so many conjectures he went to the *Queene*, to whom hee related what till then no creature living durst have spoken of; whereat shee (overtome with an extreame hearts griefe,) beganne the pitifullest complaint that could be.

The King (not able to endure the sight of her in that plight) went out from her, and having sent for the *Count of Bova*, charged him diligently to search *Palmyra's* lodgings, and study; and to bring him word of all whatsoever he found there: The *Count* obeyed, and (making a diligent search of all) made an inventory thereof.

Being come to the study he caused it to be opened, wherein the first thing he discovered, was a letter sealed and placed on the midst of the table with inscription, To the King my Lord: which the *Count* tooke, and brought unto the King, offering him also the inventory, which hee refused: But opening the letter, hee found it said,

Sir; Among all the misfortunes, which I have hitherto in these my few yeeres partaked of, the greatest is that I part without your Maesties royall licence, which if I had done in way of disobedience, or other such like thing, my life would be loathsome unto me, neither could that joy be found that might any way ease me. But (Royall Sir,) I hitherto ever have and henceforth ever will study to obey you: whereof although the obligation takes away the merit,

yet

yet bereaves it not me of that comfort which a noble minde receives in doing his duty: I am gone away, not for any curiosities sake to see my selfe free; nor for any desire I had to exercise my selfe in the profession of armes; Since that in the one I aspire to no greater liberty than to serve your Maiestie, neither had your clemency denied me (in its time fir) in the other such reasonable satisfaction, and in such an equipage, as had beene answerable to the honor I have in being your sonne. The sole cause of my going away is, Because the small fortune I have in the favour of my LORD the Prince, hath thereto advised me; Had I thought I could be able to have bettered the respect I owe him, and so become more gracious in his favor, heavens be my witnesse, I had never entertained such a resolution, knowing that next your Maiestie he is that only one whom I ought to serve and honour. But seeing my conscience doth not accuse me of misdoing, I must needs confesse, my behaviour to be such as cannot please him: And if my duty be to please him, but cannot, then am I obliged to what I can, which is, to absent farre from him my presence, which so much dislikes him. Touching the last occasion of my departure I am not willing to say any thing, not meaning to excuse my selfe, by pretending, that I could not find any reason in my LORD the Prince, who indeed cannot doe amisse in any thing he doth against me; But rather I humbly beseech your Maiestie to hold mee for faulty, condemning me for my absence (though neither voluntary nor malicious) for which (I hope by the intercession of your gracious benignity) to obtaine your royall pardon. I write not to the Queen my Lady and Mother, lest I thereby grieve her the more. Assuring nevertheless the one and the other, that I part hence with an Indelible memory of being, of both your Maiesties a most humble, and most obedient Sonne, and servant. *Polimero.*

The King strangely mooved at this letter (having called for the Prince) with an Irefull countenance thus spake unto him. *Metaneone,* I intended (many daies agoe) to make knowne unto you your ill carriage towards your brother the *Infante Polimero*: but misfortune hath so prevailed, that I have differ'd it so long as it is now past remedy you are the cause that I have lost him, in which losse I yet enjoy this comfort, that you also have lost him, and that besides 'tis you that shall repent it; you are first borne, 'tis true; but by meere fortune; And hee is last borne; by the same reason: But for his vertues worthy to be the first; And thou for thy vices worthy to be, not the last, but none at all; so much exceeds he thee in worth, that thou (because thou couldst not match him in equality of deserts) didst (of meere malice) endeavour to reduce him to those termes of desperation; Neither had thy fault beene so insupportable, if what induced thee thereto had not beene unworthy of a Prince; (who is obliged to love vertue, and not to abhorre it:) yet if thou would'st needs offend in such a case, then should thy fault have beene a generous envy to emulate vertue, where it was; now with what face canst thou shew thy selfe to the world? with what reasons canst thou excuse

cuse thy selfe: with thy hopes (perhaps) and interestes to the crown: Interestes of a Tyrant and no Prince. Think'st thou thy selfe surer of succession if thou wer'st alone: peradventure thou dost imagine the being of many brothers to be prejudiciall unto thee, and among them especially him, that is most worthy: knowest thou not that the multitude of Princely issue in a royall house, is that which assures the successor in his government; And though this multiplicity were prejudiciall to a wicked Prince (as thou art) yet availes it to the publike good, saving them a labour of seeking a master elsewhere, which cannot be done without endangering a state: Neither art thou deprived of the meanes of avoiding this hazard by out-going the rest in goodnesse, being a matter that lies in thy owne power; and although it were granted that all thy suppositions were indeed as thou wouldst have them, yet should not all things be equally considered in persons unequal. *Polimero's* qualities are not such as might give thee cause to doubt him, although (after my daies) even the kingdomes crowne were offered unto him: Seeing then thou hast had no reason to disaffect him, and yet hast hated him, thou hast made thy selfe unworthy to be such an one as nature hath made thee to be. And let thus much suffice, for what concerns thee.

Now touching what concerns me, I thee tell that in this case I am doubly interested, both as a father and as a Iudge; as a father, I accuse thee that thou hast rob'd me of my sonne, that thou hast made him a fugitive, and that thou hast lost him mee; as a Iudge, I condemne thee to restore him me againe: And that (whilst I live) thou be not scene in this kingdome without him.

Metaneone (hearing these cruell words of the King) was even halfe dead for grief, because the ingenuity of his bloud working in him, irred up from the more internall parts of the heart the seeds of verue, sowed there by education, and till then dead and buried; but in an instant in their sprouting, quickned by the heate of bloud, and revived by reproach; wherefore (kneeling on the ground) he thus answered, My L O R D, I confesse that never father with more reason bemoaned the losse of a Sonne; nor Iudge more justly condemned a guilty malefactor, than doth your Majestie: Only this one thing is wanting, that your Majestie (possessing the place both of father and Iudge) have, as being a father, too too much moderated your affections (deserving all immoderation for so worthy a sonne) and have obtained of so just a Iudge so unjust a sentence, as not to exercise the rigor worthy for so great a fault, against the wicked person of that caytive wretch that hath so maliciously committed it: I beseech you (My L O R D) that (stript naked of all pitty) you cloath your selfe with the robes of justice, and that you severely punish me that have so highly offended you, I having not deserved to have any place (much lesse the first) in the book of your generation: I know not (My L O R D) how it is possible that I (your sonne, and nursed with the crums of your royall vertues) have suffered my selfe to precipitate into so base a fault, borne to bee a slave to my owne

sensuality (without having participated of any of your perfections) but dazled with the lightsome splendor of those of my noble brother. My Liege, had not your Majestie condemned me to seeke him out, I had besought you to favour we with that employment, not as a punishment or penance (for such to mee could it not have beene) but as a supream favour, being assured that if I finde him not, and though I finde him, if I obtaine not his gracious pardon (which I cannot pretend of other than a *Polimero*) I shall leade but an ever-dying life: And if my ill behaviour have offended you (my Leige) lost you a sonne and therewithal scandalized the world, I will endeavour with my future actions to deserye your Majesties pardon: And that both my love and respect towards my brother may yeeld a manifest testimony of my repentance; and also that my future course of life (contrary to that I formerly affected) may give the world a good example. And although I be not worthy to be called your sonne, yet (seeing it lies not in the power of my fault to cancell that character of nature) I beseech your Maiestie to favour me with some signe or assurance of my future reintegration into your royall favour, to the end that my conscience (stung with the foulness of it's fault) be not so wounded with the imagination of your Majesties hatred, as overcome with its infirmity, procure mee that have lost you a worthy son by malice, to lose you also an unworthy one by repentance; which laid, imbracing the knees of his father (which stood as a Rocke immovable) he humbly ~~kissed~~ ^{lifted} them, weeping so pitifully that the King (~~not able~~ longer to containe himselfe) raised him up from the ground, and (having first turned aside to drie the teares of his eyes,) *Metaneone* (said he) I am not a father so inexorable, but that I (seeing thy unfained repentance) can pardon thee.

And though the departure of *Polimero* be grievous unto me, yet neverthelesse so much prize I thy repentance, that thy becomming a new man doth temperate the griefe I conceive of his losse: Howsoever I will in any case have him againe, for my comfort, and thy service. I cannot yet imagine where he may be gone. Neither can I (by this letter found in his study) gather any thing of his journey: Reade it, and to morrow wee will resolve of what shall be done.

The Prince (having read the letter) was well pleased with his brothers modesty, and thought the time long of imbarking himselfe to goe finde him out, and bring him home againe. But the Queene (being informed by the King of the conference had with his sonne, of the humble speeches he used, and of the unfained teares which he saw spring from his heart) prayed the King not to suffer him to goe: wherto he had willingly condescended, if the doubt of shewing himselfe too credulous (lest this repentance were counterfeited) had not confirm'd him in his former deliberation: But the Queene (urging earnestly the businesse) with many reasons drew him at last to be of her opinion, they agreeing to send in his stead the Count of Bona, who in a well arm'd galley should suddenly depart.

part. The Prince (as soone as hee understood that the King was gone from his mother) went thither: And in the same manner as he had done with his father, (accusing himselfe of his ill carriage towards his brother) besought her pardon: But (perceiving that she consented not to what was proposed, touching his going to seeke his brother) prostrating himselfe before her, he besought her with reasons so lively, and teares so effectually, that she (mollified in affection to see her sonnes reconciled) was content to let him goe.

The Prince forthwith caused to be rig'd and trim'd up the Royall, which was a bastard Galley of three and thirty banks with sixe men to an oare, he armed her with twise as many crossebow-men as souldiers, and furnished the remnant with knights, and adorning her with double harnesse, tackling and furniture, he chose to take along with him for counsellor the same Count of Bona. By whom though hee were advised that the Galley would one'y serve in the *Mediterranean* sea, as farre as the straights, but that (being to passe thence to Ireland in respect of incommodity and perill of the long vessels in those seas,) it would be good to take a-long with them a spare shippe for that purpose; yet resolved hee to bring with him no other but the Galley, because she (being well rig'd and man'd) might overtake *Polimero's* shippe ere she could reach to the straights (being that she parted but a day and two nights before them; in which time she had no good wind, but onely one night and some few houres the day following, the rest of the time being calme as it continued to that very instant:) And if hee should neede to passe any further, he might then either leave the Galley in the straights, or send her backe againe, and there hire or buy a round vessell.

The Prince having kissed the King and Queens hands ascended into the Galley, and (causing the ghing to ply the sea with their oares) vanished in an instant out of the channell of *Birsa*, and leaving on one hand *Porto-Farina*, *Biserta*, and *Capo di ferro*, and on the other the Iland of *Sardegna*, steer'd a course right on towards the straights, the Galley flauies being eased by a little gale that blew from the shoreward.

Polimero in the meane season sayled very pensive (his vessell running the course of *Sardegna*,) hee could find in himselfe no comfort because of the discourtesies of his brother, nor quietnesse for having in such a fashion forsaken his parents: The noble Pilot (who delighted much in his generous presence) knew well who he was, and (seeing him so heavy) imagined that there was some thing occasioned it (his age and constitution not being such as might argue melancholy.) Whereupon (desirous to make him merry) he said, Sir, If you were constrained to make this voyage of necessity, which (I beleeve) you doe onely of your owne free will, I would imagine you could not be exempt from feare, being you goe to a place where the landing is somewhat dangerous: If such be the cause of your heavinesse (which I beleeve not) I beseech you be of good courage: Because (God willing) I hope (if you vouchsafe to marke what I shall tell you) to direct you in such a manner, as you may

enjoy the sight of the warres without participating the perills thereof.

Polimero (that purposed to goe for Ireland, and had put himselfe in that shippe only to get out the speedier from *Birsa*; and that till then understood nothing of that warre) desired to heare the relation thereof. The Pilot most willing to obey him, and assuring him that he should understand a memorable (though a pittifull) history, thus began.

Arato King of *Sardegna* (whither we are going) had two children, the one a male named *Pero**philo*, and the other a female called *Eromena*: both so beautifull, as that the world never produced a goodlier couple; But that which chiefly adorned their fading and corruptible beauties were the everlasting perfections of their immortal soules, whereby the one hath already, and the other doth at this present shew her selfe admirable to such as know her.

The prince *Pero**philo* was growne up to about your yeeres (being as I conceive not above sixteene) when after he was dub'd an arm'd Knight, he so manifested the dexterity of his body, as (leaving his home, and spending fower yeares time abroad in most noble atchievements) he made himselfe therby (though unknowne) famous and knowne over all the world. But (recalled by often messages from his father) he returned home with such rich tropheyes, store of good manners and languages, that (displaying them opportunely without ostentation) he both amazed and delighted such as were so fortunate as to enjoy the happinesse either of his conversation or service: whilst he thus travelled abroad to passe the time without losing it; *Eromena* at home made such a benefit and use of hers, as every man thought he could not make a richer gaine of his time than to spend it in admiring her; whose employments were a noble and solid curiosity of knowing things in their beginnings; a strict vigilancy to accuse and correct her selfe, if her perfections could have beene capable of the least error; To speculate the meanes of negotiating with diversity of persons, and to put the same in practise with the measure of more and lesse, according to the difference and merits of each one: and to yeeld every one satisfaction, so as not any (how highly soever favoured) could presume to judge himselfe worthy thereof, so well known was her Incomparable courtesie that shee participated it to all with a proportion so regular, that neither she in doing it (although a Princeesse,) nor others in receiving it (how meane conditioned soever) came thereby to lose or gaine in the imagination of others.

This court then (by meanes of these two princes) so flourished, as that the kingdome of *Sardegna* (though neither ample in territories, nor opulent in riches) surpassed neverthelesse in many things sundry of the greatest and most famous, for these Princes being young (studying onely to delight and be delighted) by their affability and gracefull behaviour, allured and wan the hearts of all that knew them. In so much as nought else was there to bee scene, but

Iouists

Iouists and tourneyes, entertainements of armes and love: so as such as came thither from other countries preferred *Calary* (which is the citty where the King did and doth yet reside) before all others the most renowned cities of *Europe*.

Among the principall dames of *Sardegna*, among the fairest and best esteemed of the Princeesse, was *Talasia*, Lady Marquesse of *Sassari*, a young Lady of nineteene yeares of age, brought up with the Princeesse *Eromena*. Who though married, had yet no occasion to leave the court, because her husband (a harsh fellow, but of a great spirit) served the King as Admirall of his fleet.

Perosphilo at his returne home was two and twentie yeere old, during all which time Love could never get any victory over him, being ever till then daunted with the Maiesty of his vertues, imployed in so many heroike actions: But (espying him now idle) thought it the fittest time to bring him under his obeysance, and (because hee had beene his wilfull enemy) with a miserable and tragicall successe.

The Lady Admiral kept continually the Princeesse her company, neither came the Prince ever to the lodging of his sister, but that hee there found her; And finding in her at first sight regard-worthy objects, hee thought well of her, ere the destinies compeld him to love her, neither imagined shee ever that the favours of the Prince were other than meere termes of gentility; wherewith she being caught, began to love him, ere shee thought her selfe belov'd of him; yet as the native vertue of the one, served as a remedy to quell downe the growing fire; so the seemely modesty of the other (fearing to presume too high) made her conceale that flame, which in the end reduced to ashes both her life and honor.

The Prince (in his long travels) lighted on a thousand occasions of love, which he eschewed, to shunne any thing that might disturbe the honorable course of his worthy enterprises; and now, freed from this care (as though other occasions deserved not such or greater obstacles) hee suffered himselfe to bee bound, and being but a Novist in that practise, thought at first, there was no such matter to bee doubted of, but deceiving himselfe (and beleeving that faire parts in a beloved object, were onely faire for being vertuous) hee perceived not how the more he esteemed it, the more it pleased him, and the more it pleased him, the more it inflamed him.

After that vertue (a greene fuell for such a fire) was somewhat dry'd up, and that it's smoake (which were good inspirations) evaporated away through the chimni's of youth, the flame of the one began so lively to communicate it selfe with the flame of the other, that joyned both in one they became to be (by little and little) an internall *Mongibello*. The Prince meditating with himselfe considered (as a presager of what was to ensue) all the mischief that afterwards befell him. There lay represented before him his Illustrious deeds, his renowne acquir'd, with those his royall vertues that purchased him the good opinion of the world, then the quality

of the woman (not for being his inferior, but for being married) and because her husband was a noble and valiant knight, the King his fathers servant, and a well deserver of the crowne.

But that which more than all the rest tormented him was his conscience, gnawing him so shrewdly, and stinging him so deeply, that the very Imagination of the sinne was to him both penance and torment.

This conflict betweene him and reason, lasted well-nigh two yeeres, during which time he did as much as a well governed understanding could doe, and thought to ease his heart of this conceit by listning to the marriage which his father treated for him with the Princeesse of *Maiorica*.

But the subtile Lady Admirall (who was long before aware of the Prince's love to her-ward; and did oft hope that the heate of youth, and delight of enjoying would in time vanquish all the *Philosophy* of vertue and reason) when she understood that hee had condescended to the conclusion of the marriage (so long for her sake suspended) was ready to grow franticke with the very thought thereof: But honesty so tempered her affections, that concealing inwardly her grieffe shee seemed in outward shew to be more joyfull than ever before: Meane time the disease creeping inwardly, brought her to her bed for not bringing her to her Beere, which had been better for her. The Physitians knew not what to doe, her impairing was manifest, her disease unknowne and strange, yea meere conjectures were deficient because the meanes (whereby to coniecture) were wanting; they applied vnto her fomentes, but not such as she required, they gave her cordialls, but not proportionable to her melancholy: so as (certaine of the evill and despairing of the cure) they left her in the hands of fortune; The Princeesse (that truly loved her) conceived thereof an extreame grieffe, not omitting to visite her dayly, having caused her to bee brought to the Palace in a covered chaire, and couch'd her in a withdrawing chamber neere her owne.

The Prince (for all his resolution made never more to thinke of her) could take no rest, neither thought he that hee could possibly live if she died, he asked for her often of *Eromena*, and was somewhat solaced in hearing the sweete harmony of her name. But finding one day his sister with bitter sobs bemoaning her as dead, hee comforted her, intermingling among the offices of consoling, an expression of a certaine pious desire he had to see her: wherupon his sister said, Alas, my LORD and brother, and well are you thereto obliged, for you owne not that subject that is more observant of you than *Talasía*: with much a-doe could the Prince refraine from teares, when (concealing his grieffe) hee said, Let us goe (*Madam*) to doe this charitable office, which I had done long ere this, had not the due respects of her sexe withheld me.

The Princeesse would first know what she did, and would goe give her notice how that the Prince would come visit her. The languishing *Talasía*, that stood on the point of death, and who (having abandoned

abandoned all earthly things) retained only the love of her *Perosphilo*; understanding that she should see him before her death, was the best contented woman in the world; and not wanting her gentile spirits (although deprived of all the rest;) sent him word, that she having never merited much, and now (being a carcasse) nothing at all should exceedingly joy to carry with her to her grave the honour of being so highly and graciously favoured of her LORD and Prince.

The chamber-windowes were all shut, so that whosoever came therein, saw nothing, but onely heard a pitifull murmure of the standers by, and sometimes the languishing sighs of the sicke Lady. *Perosphilo* was conducted unto her bed whilst the Princeesse would needs goe know of the women what she said or did since she had left her.

The grieved Prince knew not how to frame his speech, yet (with a pittifull accent) enquired of her disease; Shee (with an amorous heartsgriefe able to become visible in darknesse it selfe, thanking him for having so much abased himselfe as to come visite her his most humble handmaid) answered him; that shee knew it not otherwise, but that she must needs die. The Prince (in a manner illuminated by this answer, but much more by her manner of expressing it) suspected what the matter was indeed; but (desirous to be better cleared of his doubt) having besought her to comfort and cheere up her selfe, hee prayed her to lend him her pulse, and therewithall lest she might take cold by putting forth her arme;) he reached in his hand gently to it

But she (feeling her selfe touched with that hand which shee so much desired) not able longer to refraine, tooke it betwene her two hands, and (sweetly kissing it and bathing it with her teares) said unto him; Behold LORD, how that I, a dead woman have now more courage, than I had when I was lively: I beseech your Highnesse to pardon me, I presume too much, I know it I offend against mine own honesty, but much more against your resolution (which is by not loving me to compell me to die) yet this doth me good, that you (being the cause of my death) doe now know it; you neede feele no other pulse than my heart, which (being in you) you may keepe (as you please) dead or alive, and by it give mee either life or death.

The Prince (orecome with supream tendernesse of affection) answered, (*Madam*) I have, and doe love you, and if I resolved to strive to conceale my affection, yet did I it not with an intent to withdraw it from you, I beseech you, recover, and be well, otherwise my life shall end with your death. Scarce had he finished the last accent of his speech, when the Princeesse came unto them: Who, having asked her how she felt her selfe, said unto her, *Talasia*, I pray you torment me not by depriving me of you. All the world will have your sicknesse to be nothing else but a meere melancholy, and therefore the remedy lies in your owne power; what want you woman will you be your owne murthereffe? If you will not recover for
any

any others sake, yet doe it for mine. See (my Lord and brother) the Prince is come to visite you, and I am sure that you cannot please him better than in recovering. The Lady Admirall (who had already chased away all melancholy, and who full of content thought the time long that she left not her bed) answered; The favours (*Madam*) you doe me are such, as it is impossible for me to die, though I would; I am not so foolish but that I know, that it is better for mee to stay here, and serve you, than to lie in the grave with my ancestors: I will endeavour to obey you; and doe already perceive my selfe to have that ability which before I had not, I am toomuch obliged to my Lord the Prince, by whose gracious visit I acknowledge my selfe revived, for at his comming in, I felt my selfe so amend, as I now hold my selfe fully recovered.

The Princessse very glad some (embracing her about the necke) kissed her, and (having together with the Prince accompanied her a good while) left her, being well pleased to see manifest signes of her amendment, neither deceived she her selfe therein; for in eight daies space shee returned in her former plight both of health and beauty.

Perophilus, having thus (under the pretext of pittie) given reines to sense, thought the time tedious till he should enjoy her; and meeting her at his sisters, agreed to speake with her that night, being to enter into her house through a secret doore, (standing towards an alley frequented of few;) her husband was then executing his charge in the fleete on suspicion of the King of *Corfica*, who gave no obscure signes of enmity: Because he requiring for wife *Eromena* the Princessse, *Arato* denied her him (seeing his daughter not thereto inclined) this King (who is called *Epicamedo*) being of a crabbed nature, pimple-faced and a creple: Whereupon pretending old titles to the Iland of *Asinara*, a naturall member of *Sardegna* (it seemed) he would by this pretext molest that kingdome.

Now the Lady Admirall had in her house many maids and women, to whom she would not trust her selfe, beleiving she might better commit her life and honour both into the hands of *Prodotima* her slave (with many courtesies obliged unto her;) who withall was already (some time past) a servant in the Admirals house; and shee (seeing her selfe become her mistres treasurer of a secret of such importance) was infinitely glad thereof, hoping to reape there-from no ordinary profit; shee was borne in *Orcano* and taken on those shores, when she (running away with her lover) endeavoured to save her selfe from the fury of her parents, that came pursuing her, not because they cared either for her or for the honor of their blood (she being but basely borne) but because at her parting away she had broken up the chest in the warehouse (where her father was factor) and stolen there-out the money.

And (because matters ill begun end worse) her fortune was to escape her parents, and perish among strangers, for the galleys of *Sardegna* being (by a great tempest) wether-beaten and driven to that

that shore, the two Fugitives (spied by the Galley-slaves) were by them first taken and stript, and then presented to the Admirall.

Andropodo (which was the secret lecher) was put to serve in the stable, and she (being an artificiall dissembler) knew so well how to worke for her selfe, that she was withdrawn from base slavery to services more civill, about the person of her Mistresse. And now (perceiving her selfe imployed in affaires of so great consequence) she (with well composed words) promised her utmost helpe, and being rich in invention, discoursed upon the manner and means of the coming of the Prince with such circumspection, as the poore *Talasia* thought it impossible to perceive it her selfe, much lesse her husband; and gave her forthwith (in earnest of her liberality) two hundred crownes of gold. At the appointed houre came *Perosilo* (armed with a sword, a little buckler, and a halfe coat of maile) so secretly, as that not any of his servants were any way privy to his going, because some dayes before he had begunne to locke himselfe in his chamber, with a devise that lying a bed, he could with a little cord, open and pull towards him the doore; so now also hee caused himselfe to be set a bed, but as soone as the Gentlemen that waited on him were gone, he put on his cloathes himselfe, and getting out by a secret ladder went on to the Admirals house, where he needed not to touch the doore, so vigilant was the villanous *Prodotima*, who (expecting him, with the doore under-shut) suddenly leade him the way in. It's needlesse to tell you of the joy and pleasure of the two Lovers, because the imagination unable to conceive it, deprives the tongue of the ability of expressing it: let it suffice, that they did their best to recompence the two yeares time, lost to their loves, with the perill of death incurr'd by her in her last sicknesse; and well might they doe it, there concurring in them both, love, beauty, and youth, to make them humanely happy.

This practise continued happily, untill such time as *Prodotima* (rewarded by her Mistresse, and enriched by the Prince) beganne to desire to enjoy in liberty the selfesame pleasures with her *Andropodo*. But knew not what course to take, because to run away was a difficult matter, and to delay time grieved her; not so much, because it is a thing ordinary to expect with impatience, the fruition of dishonest desires, as because she (hoording up every day more gifts and coine) doubted lest the abundance thereof should redound more to her perill, than profit; just as it chanced her, when she was taken with the Galleyes. At length after she had a long time conceited divers projects, she ran her head into the most detestable mischief that ever was heard of in the world; and there, (without passing any further) she staid: this alone seeming unto her to be the way to re-have their liberty, regaine her sweet-heart, and to enjoy happily her ill-gotten riches. Wherefore having caused *Andropodo* to come unto her, (before she came to the purpose, she lessoned him what he should say, if by chance any body had observed them talke together,) and then afterwards she thus began.

D

Andropodo,

Andropodo, I will not make thee any long stories of my love, nor of the losses and sufferings I have endured for thy loves sake, as well because thou already knowest them, as also because I have no spare time at this present to lose in matters so superfluous, it shall suffice me onely to remember thee, how that I have beene rob'd, and that I am now a slave, for nothing else but for loving and following thee; not making any reckoning of the rest, as the losse of honor, countrey and friends, because I ever have, and yet doe prize all as nothing in comparison of thy deare selfe alone.

What I have to tell thee is, that I, desirous we might recover againe our liberty, (among many waies by mee thought of) have found out onely one easie, and (as I beleeve) without any danger. But that which should cause us to desire it the more (although it bee of it selfe desireable) is, because we now are in case and ability of enjoying it sweetly, without being beholding to any, my selfe being worth between Jewels and money neere about six thousand crowns, by what meanes I came by them, thou shalt understand with the rest: But first, thou should'st not marvaile, why I have till now concealed this from thee, because it was a matter of exceeding great importance, and though I well know that I may assuredly trust thee in any thing, yet know I also, that if I had made thee privy thereto, I could not have refrained from being good unto thee, and thou by spending, had'st given occasion to others of being inquisitive, how thou couldst come by those monies, and so our affaires might have beene peradventure indangered.

Then discovered she unto him the love between the Prince and her mistresse, shewing him all the presents bestowed on her by them, and (taking out of her chest a purse) she said unto him, What I have thought of to be done, is this; that thou goe to our Master, and tell him that upon condition that he grant us our liberty, thou wilt disclose unto him a matter of great importance, neerly concerning the principall of his interestes; thou must speake of me, not as if I knew the secret, but as thy fellow-slave and taken in thy company; assuring him that to know it he would not stand on granting liberty, not onely to two but even to two hundred slaves; which if hee promise (and that thou ghesse it bee made in such sort as if he meant really to performe it,) then tell him, that I, (not able to endure to see him so highly injured) have sent thee unto him, wherein if he doubt of being deceived, beseech him to come secretly, and his owne eyes shall see the manifestation thereof. But if he chance to deny thee, and will needs by all meanes know the matter, then set not thy selfe about this enterprize, if thou hast not the courage to resolve to die in torments, rather than to confesse it.

The hazard I confesse is great, but well recompenced with thy liberty, my person, and those riches thou here seest, wherewithall we will live all our lives time most happily. Here take these hundred crownes, if thou wilt goe, let them serve thee in thy journey; But if thou

thou canst not finde in thy heart to goe, then enjoy them, (but with such sobriety, as the aire perceiveth thee not to have them) untill fortune offer us some other occasion.

The slave as rash as malicious (having suddenly made a brieve discourse with himselfe, and ballanced the danger with the benefit,) resolved to goe, assuring her that no torment in the world, should force one word out of his mouth: onely it seemed unto him a matter worthy of consideration, whether they might trust to the performance of their masters promise, seeing it lay not in their power to force him thereto. And *Prodotima* judging the consideration to be of moment, (after she had awhile stood somewhat doubtfull) said unto him: We (my *Andropodo*) can never aspire to our liberty, but by some strange and unexpected accident, which the gods alone know, when any such may happen; as for me I can well stay for it, for though I be a slave by name, yet am I in effect a free woman: my mistresse being my slave upon the matter, neither can she deale otherwise than well with me, who have in my hands both her heart and life: but thou, that ledest a painefull life, canst no long time prolong it, without danger of thy health, yea, and of thy life it selfe; wherefore belceve me, that what I doe, that doe I not for my owne sake (because I can never have a happier nor better fortune than I already enjoy) but it is for thy sake I doe it, without whom I can take no joy, neither in fortune, nor in any goods whatsoever; and albeit in an estate so highly raised, we ought to governe our selves with all prudence, yet, if thou thinkest that it lies in our power to prevent all dangers, thou art deceived, for fortune will have a share in our actions, and for the most part wee should referre our selves to her. On these speeches *Andropodo* resolved to goe.

The fleete rode then hard by *Isoletta Asinara* (to which the King of *Corfica* pretended title) in the port of *Torre*, distant from *Calari* a hundred and sixteene miles: and the way to goe thither, passed through *Sassari* (a place of the Admirals) where he then resided for its commodiousnesse, who being there in his owne house, was not above eight mile distant from the fleete.

There accompanied him in that instant a high spirited young gentleman (his owne cozen) the Count of *Montevera*, and with him the Baron of *Frisano* (his kinsman, brought thither by him to see the Admirall.)

The slave noting his master all alone, presented himselfe before him, and said; My Lord, you wonder to see me here unsent for, but the occasion that drew me hither is of such importance, and concerns you so neerely, that I resolved by all meanes to come hither; being well assured that when you shall know it, you will not onely take it in good part, but will also courteously grant me what I shall demand of you.

The Admirall, who (seeing him come unawares) had ey'd him with a dogged looke, suspecting that he meant to flie into *Corfica*, but that being discovered, he resolved to come to *Sassari*; or else that

somebody had enticed him to runne away (which might be the better done under colour and pretext of being his slave) yet hearing these words, permitted him to speake all that he would. The slave (observing the comming of others into the roome,) with a submissive voice besought him to make a shew of bidding him doe something, till such time as the company were gone away. The Admirall seeing him so circumspect, thought his suspition might be vaine, and (his hart telling him that something was amisse) he bade him do some services about the chamber, to set him aworke till he were rid of those that were there; then (having made him follow him alone into the garden) he commanded him to tell him the occasion of his comming. Whereat he kneeling downe, thus said unto him;

My Lord, the thing I have to tell you is of such importance, as, if it should be knowne, there is no man living could save my life: although then I (as your slave, and as a slave well used) am in all things obliged unto you, without having any reason of pretending any reward from you; neverthelesse, I beseech you to be pleased, that (before I tell it you) I begge the liberties of my selfe and *Prodotima*, who (to tell you the truth) is my wife; and though libertie be the onely thing that ought to be most desired of every one in the world, yet would I not in this case desire it, were I not of necessitie (for the saving of my owne life) constrained so to doe.

The Admirall (having heard these well compact reasons) absolutely promised him all that he requested; in case, the matter were such as he made it to be. Whereupon the slave kissing his feete, said vnto him; My Lord, *Prodotima* sent me unto you, and (out of the obligation she owes you) lets you know, that your bed is violated by the Prince, which (if you beleeve not) she offers to let you see.

The Admirall (who expected no such newes) was ready to fall dead for griefe thereof; but striving to encourage himselfe the best he could, he demanded of him many things touching that purpose: but the other (fearing to faile) said, he knew no more thereof, but that *Prodotima* could fully satisfie him of all. The Admirall (concealing what he felt in himselfe) sent him to the stables, bidding him say, that he himselfe had sent for him thither. Afterwards (setting himselfe to ruminare, or rather to rave on the case of the businesse) he could not imagine that the slave came to tell him a lie: neither held he him to be so simple, as not to know his owne danger.

Whilst he thus stood, there came to him unlookt for, the *Coant* of *Montevero*; who (seeing him changed as if he had beene sicke a whole moneths time) asked him, if he felt not himselfe well? And being answered with, no; The *Count* said, that it might be, that he was not sicke, but that it could not otherwise be, but that some great ill had befallen him. The Admirall (suffering at these words a deeper impression of griefe) burst out like a child into an extremitie of weeping: whereupon the *Count* (taking him by the hand) led him to the end of the walke, and having first seated themselves in the thicket of a grove, besought him to tell him the occasion of his griefe,

griefe, to the end that he might either comfort, counsell, or assist him. The Admirall blushing for shame of being found in such a plight, (after he had dried his eyes) related unto him all that the slave had told him: whereupon the *Count* (after a short pause) said unto him, Cozen, the occasion of your griefe is great, not in respect of what is already happened you, (you being not the first that had a dishonest wife) but in regard of what may befall you, if you thinke to repaire your honour; whereof (because of its difficulty) you cannot easily resolve: suspend (I pray you) your sorrow, lest by bewraying it, you marreall your businesse. Only this much Ile tell you, that though in revenging your wrong I were sure to lose my life and goods, yet would I most willingly forgoe them, and thinke them well spent for your honors sake. The Admirall (framing the best countenance he could) departed thence, to which place both of them returned againe after supper, under pretence that the *Baron* was disposed to recreate himselfe: where after much consultation, they resolved that the Admirall should goe disguised to *Caleri*, to assure himselfe of the act, before they would thinke of the rest, and to the end that this his journey might not be any way suspected; they tooke on them to goe thence alone to *Montelione*, without any attendance, that those of the household might thinke they made this journey for some amorous pleasure. The slave sent they two dayes before with a spare Barbar horte, which the Admirall was to ride on; lead by him a maine pace as far as *Montecouo* being fortie miles, where he left him, having found another that there expected him, being sent there by the *Count*; which hee led as farre as *Genevi*, being forty miles more, where after he had delivered him with the counter-signe agreed on in a place without the Castell, he went thence a-foote to *Caleri*.

The Admirall, after he had continued at *Saffarie*, till such time as he imagined that the horses sent before were somewhat reposed, set out on horsebacke, very early, accompanied with the *Count*, galloping together as farre as *Montelione*, where leaving him at a little obscure Inne, he mounted first on the one fresh horse, and afterwards upon the other, posting on with such diligence that by darke night hee reached to *Caleri*, where expected by the slave, that through the stables conducted him to the house (to the lodgings reserved for strangers,) *Prodotima* came to finde him out.

The words were few, because they were to goe thence to watch the comming of the Prince: she led him into the fore-chamber of her mistresse (who was already laid in bed) and there hid him in the study, where-hence he might first see the Prince, as he passed by, and then through the doore (which was to stand open) heare and see all the speeches and actions of his wife. He was well armed, because he came of purpose about a businesse of such importance, and wanting neither valour nor courage, had soone resolved with himselfe to kill them both; if his Cozen (foreseeing the danger) had not made him promise to do nothing else but assure himselfe of the fact.

In lesse than a quarter of an houre came the Prince, and passed

through the fore-chamber with a light that *Prodotima* bore before him. The Admirall saw him, and knew him he heard their amorous complements, their reciprocall affections, the smacking of their kisses, his putting off his clothes, and going to bed: I wonder that madnesse, jealousie, and fury, made him not forget his promise.

Prodotima gone out, he would not stay to heare any more (not willing to trust too much to his owne patience.) Of her would he needs know in many particulars, and (amongst other things) the time and continuance of this practice. She, concealing such things as might condemne her selfe for a mediatrix, told him, that it had not lasted many daies, and that she (for her part) had absolutely denied her assistance, when she was thereto requested by her mistresse, who therefore (mistrusting her) had caused the Prince to threaten her, the selfe same evening, when her mistresse went her selfe in person to open him the dore (as she beleaved she had done oftentimes before her being made privy thereto) so that she for feare of her life could not choose but obey her.

The Admirall, after he had seene and heard too much, went his way, charging her to serve them with a good countenance, untill such time as he gave her further order; promising her, that (over and besides her liberty) hee would therefore well reward her.

The slave having put the horse to stand in a stable without the house, found him (when he went to saddle him) so tired and weary, as he could not possibly cause him to get up on his feet, so as the Admirall knew not what to doe, and (not able to endure any longer the sight of his house, or of *Calari*, no nor of the skie that covered them) went out of the citiy on foot; giving the slave money to hire another horse, as farre as *Geneui*, whitherward he was to come after him and overtake him by the way.

The subtile hangman (well knowing where to finde choise of horses,) chose out an excellent good one, paying well for him, and leaving the other in pawne thereof; received of his master when he overtooke him, the counter-token for getting againe the horse at *Geneui*; whither he walked at his leasure. But the Admirall carried by Furies road those five and thirty miles in two houres, and with the other two horses came to *Montecorno* ere the Count was stirring out of his bed; where (almost dead with wearinesse, hunger, and griefe) he told him of all that had happened him.

The Count (although astonished to heare him) answered nothing else, but that he had well done to hold his hands, praying him to repose himselfe a little, as he had need for not having slept a winke the two former nights, and that afterwards they would discourse of the businesse with more conveniency and leasure.

The Admirall (although he had more desire to die than to live, yet overcome by necessity having refreshed himselfe with a little meate,) without stripping himselfe of his cloathes, lay him downe

to sleepe a nap on the beds side. And afterwards awaking with a shivering feare, caused by his imagination and passion, he found the Count awake, who spake thus unto him:

Cozen, I have thought on your case, wherein I finde you may proceede two manner of waies, the one profitable, but contrary to the common opinion of our countrey; the other (by the same opinion) honorable, but ruinous: in the first, is laid before you; how that he who offends you is your Prince, & such a Prince, as (this fault excepted) might be entituled the worthiest that the world enjoyes.

Adde hereunto his discretion in doing what he doth, in a manner so secret, that no living creature can come to know it, and what you esteeme an offence is rather an amorous trespasse, than an injury. Moreover if we ought to ground our resolutions on the common opinion, we shall finde that a Prince takes not away the honor of his subject in enjoying his wife; which if it be allowed, though all the world know it, why will not you allow it now that no body knowes it? Infinite truly are the number of such, as will laugh at you in their sleeves, if you but doe otherwise; because honor is indeed in the end nothing else, but a meere opinion, and many nations mocke and leere at us, who with so great and so many dangers endeavour to protect the chastity of our wives, perswaded in our selves that their dishonesty spots us with infamy.

Therefore, if you will follow this course, you shall (besides the saving of your honour) reape therby many commodities, you shall find your selfe freed of a grieffe that so much troubles you; and consequently, letting all things passe, you neede not thinke of any thing else, than of your course of life.

And may withall (if jealousie should yet torment you) in some seemely fashion thwart those loves by causing your wife to come to *Saffari*; you shall save your owne patrimony, and the estates of divers others; and besides free from danger your own life with those of your friends and kindred.

The other way of proceeding is, for such as beleeve, that this case marcheth in the very front of the first files of honor, which if you'll follow, you'll uncloath your owne shame, and thereby procure your selfe many losses and disgraces, as to be branded with the infamous name of a Traitor, and utterly lose your goods, countrey, honor, dignities and friends. The choise therefore lies in your owne hand, and on you alone depends the election thereof.

This said, he pawz'd awhile, till (seeing the Marquesse stand silent, without making any answer) he thus proceeded: I beleeve, that these reasons shall not (peradventure) obtaine of you that credit, as I wish they could; in that you may perswade your selfe that I propose them, onely to free my selfe from the communie of your perils; but (to cleare you of that doubt) I heare seriously protest unto you, that I am most willing to incurre with you any danger whatsoever.

The Admirall (looking somewhat more cheerefull) answered,
(Cozen)

(Cozen) I have not so little judgement, but that I know you; though your reasons indeede are more profitable than honourable, my businesse carries with it no other ballance than that of honour, which if in this case it cannot be taken from me by the Prince, because he is a Prince; no more can he deprive me thereof in another case, for being such a person: and Princes by this reason should be lesse powerfull than private men, for such (for being private men,) might and are able to doe injuries, if they would, whereas Princes cannot so doe (for being Princes.) But this (cozen) is a false reason, found out and invented either by the Princes themselves, or by the women, who (being dishonest) would thereby defend their honestie; or by their husbands, who faine would under that veile hide their owne disgraces. As concerning vertue, I confesse the Prince hath heretofore participated of some part thereof, whereof he is at this present deprived, because true vertues are perpetuall, neither are they ever found unaccompanied with others like themselves, so that when one of them is corrupted, all the residue are thereby blemished. Touching honour, I allow what you say thereof: but the selfesame argument of yours is sufficient to give you satisfaction; True honour (as you terme or limit it) is that, which is found common in every one, as the law of nature is common to every man; observing this rule, I should have but small reason to finde my selfe aggrieved. But there are certaine particular lawes, which although they be not observed elswhere, than in places where they are established, yet can it not be denied, but that they are lawes; and ought to bee knowne and observed of every one for such. When custome hath brought a thing to become, (or be esteemed) a branch of honour, whosoever is not observant and obedient thereto, is dishonored, not because it ought to bee so in effect, but because we have consented that it should be so. I confesse that to watch over womens honesty, with so great curiositie, is a custome altogether prejudiciall: but wee being thereto subject, must needs endure it; and so much the rather, by how much we are the more conspicuous & eminent in our callings. And if I would free my selfe from the bonds thereof, then would it not be said that I did it, because the Philosophie of honour taught me to despise this fantastical opinion; but rather for that avarice and ambition had induced me to become patient: so as I shall not onely make my selfe subject to the sottish talke of the vulgar, but shall also bee accounted of my Peeres scorne-worthy, and infamous. As for my life and goods, the selfe-same custome will answer for me; which custome will, that I preferre my selfe, and my owne honor before all things: and that with losing all, I declare my selfe a rebell to Nature, which commands us to looke to our owne profit, and to conserve what we enjoy of hers. Touching my friends, I know not what to answer you, saying only, that the disgrace I suffer doth also reflect on them; what is my case to day, may be theirs to morrow. It rests that I tell you, that the Prince might have allowed himselfe pleasures without offending any man, as wise Princes doe, who jest not, but where

where such iests are received for favours. The summe of all is, that I am resolved, that the lives of both the Prince and my wife shall satisfie the vengeance of my wronged honour.

Seeing that such is your resolution (replied the *Count*) mine also shall be conformable to yours. And after they had proposed divers meanes for effecting it, at length they concluded on these; that the Admirall should sell a good part of his goods, who to give a colour to the sale thereof, was to lose publikely at play with the *Count*, sixty thousand crownes. That he should practize a plot with the King of *Corfica*, by the mediation of *Mortiro* (one of the Ambassadors that came to demand the Princeesse) a friend to them both, whom they were to procure to come disguised, and give them the meeting. That the assistance of that King should be sued for, with proffering him in recompence, the Kingdome of *Sardegna*. That they should in the meane time insinuate into the love of the Captaines, Souldiers, and Mariners; but so discreetly, as their unaccustomed liberality might not cause them to be suspected. All which accomplished, the last thing should be the death of the Prince.

The Admirall, after this agreement, seemed to be of better comfort, and considering how it would be well done to prepare thereto their friends; and particularly the Baron of *Frisano*, the *Count* thereto agreed not; but said that the foundations being once well grounded (which were the moneyes and the backing of the King of *Corfica*) their friends would bee thereunto afterwards more easily perswaded.

The day following they returned to *Sassari*, where taking on them to be merry, and setting themselves to gaming; the Admirall lost some monies, which he tooke out of his pocket, and then playing on ticket, lost twenty thousand crownes: under which pretext he had leasure to give himselfe over to his melancholy, and holding on his game (although the Baron with many Captaines would have set themselves in betweene them, and the *Count* himselfe made as though he plaid unwillingly) in a few dayes, the Admirall resolutely lost threescore thousand crownes.

The newes of these losses were suddenly rumored about the Court, and came to the eares of the Admirals wife, who grieved extremely thereat; and not long after received from her husband a letter, with order, to finde out such as would buy so much of his goods, as might make up the summe of sixty thousand crownes. Now the Prince being that night come unto her, she with be-teared eyes, shewed him the letter: and he (glad of having occasion to gratifie in any thing his *Talasia*) wished her not to trouble her minde therewith. Having therefore sent for the Admirall to *Calari*, (who came thither very unwillingly) he bespake him in this wise: I understand that your Steward hath offered to sale your goods, which have for these many yeares belonged unto your honour, for which I am indeede sorry, more for the occasion, than for the thing it selfe; the King (my father) will not that you (being the second Baron

of *Sardegna*) should (by being ruinated) become unable to serve him: repaire therefore unto the Treasurer generall, who hath order to deliver you sixty thousand crownes; make use thereof, and restore it againe, by little and little; without discommodating your estate. The Admirall (who well knew the cause of this liberalitie) dissembling, kneeled downe before him, and with most humble speeches, thanked him, doing the selfesame to the King; who advised him not to suffer himselfe by play, to be any more reduced to such necessitie.

The Admirall continued at home but a very small time, where it behooved him to make much of his wife, with no lesse art, than disgust. Returned backe to *Sassari*, he wrote to his Cozen, to whom (as soone as hee was come) he publikely disbursed sixty thousand crownes, acquiring thereby the praise and reputation of a loyall and generous spirit.

Afterwards retired aside, the Count shewed him the answer of *Mutiro*, the contents whereof was, that he would goe to *Astinara*, in the habit of a Fisherman, where they were to expect him; they therefore retired to the fleete, and (taking on them to goe a fishing) went so farre on wards till they came to *Astinara*, where the counterfeited shepheard expected them, and landing a bowshot distant from him, (leaving their Squires busied in making dinner ready) they walked along the strond, till they came to his Barke; where (dissembling the matter before his servants, there present, and asking him what he was? and what he there did?) they singled him from them; and he (with a seeming humility) followed them, till such time as the Admirall perceiving himselfe out of sight, told him; that the occasion wherefore he had prayed him to come thither was, for that he (resolved to avenge his wrong'd honour) was desirous to participate it to King *Epitamedo*, who by that occasion, might not onely be revenged for the refusall of the Princeesse *Eromena*, but also impatronize himselfe of that kingdome, which they offered him, telling him, that they demanded no moneys; howbeit he might doe well to imploy such as hee should have given them, in reinforcing of the fleete with more men and munition to passe over into *Sardegna*, when he should be thereof advertized. That the Admirall would stirre up to rebellion the fleete under his command (having already purchased the love and affection of the Captaines and Souldiers thereof) which he could the easier accomplish, because his was no rebellion, but a just revenge. That as soone as he received an answer, he would communicate the businesse to all his friends, whereof some of them had their lands and castles lying in the Province of *Lugodori*, over against *Corfica*, so as at their landing in the Iland, they should find no resistance. That in these consisted all the strength of the kingdome; in that (the Prince being once dead) there would remaine to King *Arato*, but very few souldiers, without either Generall or Captaines.

Glad was *Mortiro* of so goodly an imployment, whereof when they

when they had sufficiently discoursed, every one returned to his owne barke, agreeing within six dayes to meete againe in the same place, where being accordingly returned, *Murtriro* presented the Admirall with a letter from King *Epicamedo*, whereby he accepted of their offer, promising all whatsoever they had required of him, specifying withall, how that he would send into the Iland, twentie thousand souldiers, and increase the fleet to the number of five and twenty Galleyes, together with this message sent he him for a present, a rich sword with the hilts, inlaied with many diamonds, and unto the *Count* a rich Jewell to weare in his hat.

Afterwards, having more particularly ordered a settled course for what was to be effected; the Admirall together with the *Count*, returned to the Fleet, and thence went away as if it had beene to recreate themselves, together with the *Baron* of *Frisano*: to whom when they had communicated the businesse, he remained so troubled in mind to here of such an unexpected act done by the Prince, that loving both the Admirall and his Cozen (as it were) with an equall affection, he easily consented to make one in this conspiracy.

Thence compassing about *Capo Luogodori*, they infected all those tributaries thereabout, whereof the principallest were, the *Earles* of *Reparata*, of *Pusineria*, and of *Castle Rabone*, with the *Barons* of *Ianque*, of *Lilaraba*, of *Lagosardo*, and of *Villapetres*. All these were present at the death of the Prince, except the *Count* of *Montevero*, who (with the occasion of apparant receipt of sixtie thousand crownes, having (by the Admirals appointment,) liberally given as largesse of his winnings in the army, more than six thousand of them) had so obliged the Captaines, and all the rest, that it was thought fit to leave him in the custody and government thereof.

The Admirall in the meane time, sent the King and Prince often intelligence of the great preparations of the King of *Corfica*, desiring to be authorized with greater power, to the end he might give order in the country of *Luogodori*, for the defence of that *Cape* (dangerous in time of invasion) as the neereft unto the enemy. Whereupon he received greater authoritie than he desired, and began first to fortifie his owne holds (namely) *Sassari* and *Porta Torre*. Thence (with title of Commissary Generall) he visited the Conspirers, and caused their townes to be fortified, their battalions armed, and many companies of souldiers to be levied all at the charge of the Kings Exchequer, without a penny of expence, of either his, or his complices. All which accomplished (and nothing but the execution left uneffected) he sent for the slave (under pretence of having the horse which he governed) who come, and instructed of what he had to do, returned to expect him at *Caleri*. Where the Admirall with the conspirers, came by night at the houre appointed, and were hidden by *Prodotima*, (after *Talasia* was a bed) in the study of the fore-chamber. After that the Prince had received intelligence from the Admirall of the King of *Corfica's* being up in armes, he felt in his

heart (although he was the most valourous Knight in the world) a new effect of melancholy, with some conceit or feeling of feare, whereat he was astonished: It seemed to him unlikely that *Epicamedo* (alone without forraine aide) durst move warre against *Sardegna* (a kingdome well-neere thrice greater than his, and withall abounding with warrelike subjects.) And (being desirous to proceede on sure ground) he had sent many spies into *Corfica*, who conformably advertized him of the great preparations there, and how that all the troopes marched towards *Basilica*, over against *Sardegna*; whereupon he often sollicitated the *Marquesse*, by sundry poasts, to assure that Countrey of *Luogodori*, till such time as he (having mustered up the horse, and armed men) came thither in person.

All that morning, which preceded his death, spent he with the King and Queene (who grieved to see him so changed) and he angry at himselfe, strove to force himselfe to be merry; but his joyes vanished in an instant.

In the evening he determined to goe sport himselfe with his *Talsia*; *Prodotima* led him to the chamber as she was accustomed, all trembling (as knowing what was to befall him,) and passed before the Conspirers. The Prince disarm'd and uncloath'd himselfe: but the Admirall (not able to hold any longer) rush't into the chamber, just as the Prince thought to lay himselfe downe, and (without speaking a word) thrust at him a full *stocada*, which although it pierced him quite through the other side, yet was it not mortall: The Prince (seazing suddenly on his sword that lay by him) stroke at the Admirals head with so maine a force, that he (warding with his buckler) was not able to beare off the blow, but yeelding thereto, the sword came to charge him so furiously on the head, that cutting through the Helmet, it somewhat wounded him. But the Prince seeing so many about him, and among those, the *Earles of Reparata* and *Castel Robone*, (both his speciall Favorites) detesting, and wroth to see so great ingratitude, he said unto them; And to you Traitors, what have I done that you thus murther me? Thou hast done too much in maculating our blood, (answered *Reparata*;) now these were all of them of kinne, either to the Lady, or to the Admirall; and the Count of *Reparata* was her owne Cozen-germaine, who thought this fatall shame concerned him nearest, in that she had neither father nor brother living. The Admirall (who had fore-thought of the manner of conducting this enterprize) had before-hand furnished his companions with lavelings, because, having considered the valour of the Prince, he judged it folly to regard the faire termes of Knight-hood, much rather, in that he doubted lest the noise and bustling of their blowes might indanger them; so as the poore Prince pierced at once with six darts, was not any more able, either to strike or speake. The *Baron of Iangue*, and the Count of *Pussinera*, were (from the beginning) runne to the bed, who (lest the Lady Admirall should cry out) held close her mouth stopt up with the sheetes: her husband, (having made her rise up, and put on a chamber-weede) intending (because

(because he disdained to kill her himselfe) to cause her to be strangled by the slave, seeing the Prince not yet quite dead, grew desirous (for his greater anguish) that she should give him his last wound, and having therefore made her take a Poyniard in hand, he told her, his will was, that to revenge the death he had given her honour, she should resolve to kill him with her owne hands; she (seeing him wallowing in a lake of bloud, and how he though gasping for life, yet beheld her) laying aside all feare, stab'd her husband with the Poyniard in the face, thinking to strike him in the throat-pipes (for well deemed she him arm'd every where else) and had therewithall sped him, had he not fallen flat on the ground; then turning towards the next unto her, which was the *Baron of Vellapetres*, she ranne him in the flanke, and kil'd him. The Admirall (in the meane while gotten up) gave her a thrust in the side, which pushed her upon the *Baron of Lybaraba*; in whose belly, she without losse of time, buried the Poyniard up to the hilts, (aiming her thrust low, for doubt of sticking it in his coat of maile) and therewith sped him; but then, shee beaten downe with divers blowes (and struggling to set her selfe forwards againe to kill her husband) came to fall upon the Prince, where faintly kissing him, she breathed out her life with him; in that very instant, as he breathed out his last gaspe.

The Admirall seeing his plot brought to passe, at so deere a rate, as to have two of his companions slaine, and himselfe wounded; knew not what course to take with their bodies, and yet needs must he have resolved to get him thence: when every one advising him not to lose any time about two inutile carcasses, he thought his best and safest course was to be ruled by them. Having therefore bound up his wounds, hee wished them all to goe out into the Hall, to the end that those of the house (wakened with their bustling) seeing them jest (beating one the other with pillowes) might beleve that thence began the first noise: The beds being made ready they called for dice, commanding the servants to goe sleepe, under colour of having no man to over-looke their game; and because many of them (considering how unfit it was to leave Lords of such a ranke, not attended with as much as one servant) would have waited out of the Hall; they constrained them to get them thence, and by locking the doores after them, had thereby conveniencie a little after to shift themselves away thence, without being observed of any. The Admirall had fore-thought of all things (except the two slaves,) whom then also he had not remembred, had they not presented themselves before him, so as they must have taken them up behind them on their horse-croppers, had not the death of the two *Barons* remedied that inconvenience. And because *Caleri* for the suspition it had of *Corfica*, stood then guarded with some watch; it behooved the Admirall to make himselfe known unto the Porter of the Citie. They rode all night, having twise changed horse, and taking the way of *Montevero*, arrived there the day following. There were they inforced to leave behind them *Prodotima* (accompanied with the

slave) all galled and bruised with riding; to embarke themselves suddenly at the mouth of the river *Thirsis*, distant but eight miles from *Montevero*, and thence to get them to *Porto Torre*, themselves without one minutes stay, (holding on their journey with incredible diligence) arrived the night following at *Saffari*.

As the Pilate held on his discourse, there appeared in sight a small Barke, sayling here and there without any order or direct course, which being shewed them by *Polimero*, they judged it to be some one, that had beene rob'd by Pirates, and left as a play-game to the windes; (desirous to know the truth) they bore up to her. But because she was yet afarre off, the Pilate (requested to continue his History) thus proceeded.

It grew to be farre dayes, and *Talasia's* Gentlewomen expected that *Prodotima* should come to call them up, as she was wont to doe: but dinnertime being come, and no *Prodotima* as yet appearing, and the Serving-men on the other side (marvelling they saw not in the strangers lodgings, the Knights come thither with their Master the night before) went on towards the fore-chamber, where *Prodotima* lay, where knocking many times, and hearing no body stirre within, they began to doubt, of I know not what. Whereupon, bouncing againe many times and often, they resolved without any respect, to throw downe the doore, which when they had done, and found not their *Prodotima*, onwards they went into the chamber, and there they saw the pittifull spectacle of foure bodics lying weltred in bloud; whereof (to their great horror) they knew at the first sight their *Mistresse* and the *Prince*. My tongue cannot expresse the effects of grieve and amazement, that seized on these poore people, neither beleeve I, that they can be imagined, unlesse the imagination had experimented a like disaster: they could not as much as ghesse how the matter stood, because they never were any way privie to the *Prince* his love: but seeing him now in such a plight, and knowing that their Master came to the house that night, and thence shifted himselfe away privily, they beganne to doubt of what was so indeed.

The Steward (having caused the gate to be shut, with charge not to open it to any man) went to the Kings Councell, to whom he related the fact, conformable to his conjectures.

The Councell (not knowing by what meanes they might therewith acquaint the King,) were advised by the *Marquesse* of *Bossa*, Lord high Chamberlaine, not to informe the King of any thing, ere they had seene themselves the body of the *Prince*, and with more certaintie informed themselves of the case, wishing therefore, all, or some of them, to goe to the Admirals house, whilst he tooke care that no man came neere the King. His Councell was imbraced; The *Marquesse* retiring to the Kings chamber, and the others, (as soone as their coaches came) hurrying to the Admirals house, where causing it to be close shut up, and the chamber opened, they saw the relation prove but too too true; there being not any of them

them present, who by the place, persons and qualities of the dead, comprehend not the case.

Having afterwards examined the household, they understood of the Admirals being there that night, accompanied with *Reparata*, and the rest, and how that the slaves were not thence scene, by whom they beleev'd the *Prince* to bee betraied, and so by the helpe of the rest murdered, by the Admirall. They sent suddenly to the gates, where they understood that the Admirall, with eight Companions, all well horsed, went out at the gate of *Castlemuni*. They resolv'd to send after him, and having to that end sent for the Count of *Montereale*, Generall of the horse, and shew'd him the body of the *Prince*, they committed to his charge what he was to doe. The Count (who adored him living, and now being dead, could not satisfie himselfe in bemoaning him) considering that the present state of the businesse required somewhat else than teares, went on his way most resolute to use all possible diligence to revenge his death. The Lords of the Councell in the meane time, (after they had taken such order, as was requisite, touching the bodies of the *Prince*, and of the guiltie Traitors) returned to the Palace. But the Citizens having (I know not how) understood of the accident, and telling it one unto another, were scene to shut up all their shops in an instant, with lamentations so manifest, that the King perceiving it, asked the Marquesse, what was the matter, who answered him that he knew not: but the King (seeing it more and more increase) bade him goe call the *Prince*, and learne what the matter was. Wherein, whilst the Marquesse tooke on him to obey him, there appeared in his presence the Privie Counsellors, who when the King saw come thronging so many together, he imagined that some great disaster had hapned; for all of them pitifully lamented, insomuch as the *President* (who was to be the Speaker) could not utter a word; whereat the King impatient, turning towards the Marquesse, and seeing him make greater moane than any of the rest; asked him angerly, if the King of *Corfica* were in *Caleri*, or if the Kingdome were lost. My Sovereigne Leige, (answered then the *President*) would to God, I could bring you that newes in exchange of this other, a thousand times more wofull; for there might be hope to recover againe the Realme, whereas the losse that both you and the Kingdome have now sustained, is irrecoverable. What can it then be? (replied the King) Is *Perosflo* dead? At which demand all of them kneeling downe, and pitifully lamenting him with grievous sobs, and mornefull cries, answered that he was.

The King hereat astonish'd, would have runne towards the Lodgings of the *Prince*, thinking to see him there: When the Queene (comming out thence, accompanied with *Eromena*, with their heire hanging disorderly about their eares, more like *Bacchanals*, or mad women than themselves) met him at a doore, full-bur. The Queene strangely gazing on the standers by, with reiterated words, cried out, *Perosflo*? Where is hee? Where is my Sonne? Come, give him mee:

mee: withhold him not from mee, for I will have him.

This incounter was to the King, even as a fire which come neere a dry tow-like matter, fuming, and halfe consumed, puffs it up in a flame in an instant, for seeing his wife and daughter in so strange a fashion, his spirits and courage so failed him, as he sunke downe to the ground. But the Queene without taking any notice of him, (running about, while here, while there) continued in calling out for her Sonne, till become all-hoarse with crying, she held her eyes, immoveably fixt where once she let fall her sight, without shedding a teare.

Eromena (the mirrour of beauty and Prudence) stood in that instant (with her faire eyes concentrated) pale, and wan. She wept not, and yet she wept, for her weeping were exclamations and sighes, she called on the beloved name of her brother, she sought for him all over his Lodgings, and behind the Tapistrie, as if she had hoped to have found him there hidden.

The King was raised up from the ground, and laid in his bed, so would the Ladies have likewise disposed of the Queene; but she (become frantike) ran up and downe the Palace, and round about the Lodgings, complaining of the heavens, and cursing men; till she brought her selfe to that passe as she was not able any more either to move or crie. The numerous companie of Ladies, that pittifully wept about her, had not beene able to re-conduct her to her Lodgings, if *Eromena* (fearing with her brother to lose also her mother) had not with her presence and teares, importuned and perswaded her to retire her selfe.

It boots me not to tell you of the revolt of the Citie, when the corpes of the *Prince*, were (about midnight) brought to the Palace.

The dolefull *Eromena*, (considering how her father was, by reason of his great grieve fallen sicke of a Feaver, and her mother growne distracted of her senses) was not therefore willing to let them know any thing, but went her selfe with a few others, to view the body; but then, although all her vitall powers ran unto her heart; although all her force and vertues (whereof the heavens were unto her so graciously liberall) united themselves together to fortifie her courage, yet could not all this save or sustaine her spirits, and almost her life from failing her at that instant: she grew pale, shee fwooned, she fell dead, at least in all likelihood, and died she had indeed, if a spirit more feeble had given shape and being to a lesse generous heart: In the end (come to her selfe, and sitting by the corps as she watered his breath-lesse face, with a fountaine of her teares) she said:

Are these then the joyes (Brother) which we expected of thee? Are these the hopes that the world had of thee, & which with all reason is expected of thy valour? Is this the flourishing age, by so short a space of life, so cruelly cut off, to bring therewithall to an end with no lesse crueltie the lives of those that brought thee into the world? Why

why did not thy resplendent vertues dazle the eyes of him that slew thee, maugre the spectacles of envie? O cruell starres ! To what end served such and so great influences of beautie and exquisite feature in a body peerlesse for prowesse, and adorned with so divine a soule, seeing a little blemish, an error (in youth so tender) so excusable hath caused and procured the corruption and ruine of all those excellent perfections, to give the whole world cause to lament the losse of them : yet are they not lost, for what ascends from above must returne to whence it came, so as we have no cause to grieve for thy generous soule, but yet can we not chuse (as we are mortall) but lament the dissolution of the perfectest composure that ever nature put together : neither can we without death chuse but bewaile thy death, depriving us of the life, which from thy sweet life we received; for in thee were indivisible all those graces, which the *Graces* participate not to others, but in such measure as is requisite for the delight of humane kind. We cannot chuse but mourne, seeing our selves threatned at home and abroad, being (since we are deprived of thee) without force and vigor: neither can we chuse but lament, when we behold the state of our drooping kingdome, which by thee alone become once renowned and famous, returns (now that it is deprived of thee, it's light and life) to it's former cloudinesse, and dimme obscuritie. But if every one hath cause to lament, why should I not then bewaile thee with an eternall lamentation; seeing I participate of all the generall causes, and have withall peculiar to my selfe alone, a particular cause, as being left, the onely Sister, of an onely brother, taken from me suddenly unawares, and without all reason? Here (overcome with extremitie of griefe, and being not able to forbear) she flung her selfe upon him, whence as her Ladies endeavored to raise her, she (turning towards them with a fierce and severe look) said unto them; How unseasonable, unjust, and pittilesse, is this pittie of yours, that would defraud so worthy a *Prince* of these funerall rites I owe him : Which if I beleaved that I could better solemnize with my death, I would willingly doe it? Then (taking off the sword from the corpes side, and lifting up her eyes to heaven) she proceeded. But I assure my selfe (my noble Brother) that I am not the sacrifice which thou requirest: Wherefore if so be that thy divine ghost doth as yet wander or hover hereabout thy faire body, & that thou seest our griefe, comfort us then, (we beseech thee) whilst I also comfort thee, and assure thee that I will never rest, till I have executed just vengeance on him that unjustly slew thee. Which said (girding her selfe with the sword) she dried away her teares, and seeing there was no action to be hoped for of the King her father, she caused the Councell to come together, and (after a brieve consultation) commanded the souldiery to be mustred, resolving (at the returne of the *Count of Montereale*) to march in her owne person to *Sassari*: most assured that the kingdome would be on that part assaulted by King *Epicamedo*, without whose privitie, the Admirall would never have undertaken to murder the *Prince* her Brother.

The very same night she privately caused the corps to be interred, reserving the solemnizing of the funerall rites till her returne, enjoying in so great heavinesse, one sole comfort, which was to see the unfained teares of the people.

The Count of *Montereale* used all possible meanes to ore-take the Conspirators. Albeit he perceived that he laboured in vaine, the pursued having gotten the start of him both in time and riding: which hee could not recover without change of horses: and had therefore returned backe, but that he hoped to blocke them up, either in *Sassari* or *Porte Torre*, or at least to chale them out of the kingdome.

The day following he came to *Montevero*, where when the dolefull newes were spred abroad, the lamentation was such, as you would have judged it to be an effect of one only heart and spirit.

Now whilst the Count could imagine no possible meanes to over-take the Admirall (who by that time might have reach't to *Sassari*) he was informed how that there was left behind him in that village, a slave of his together with a woman slave bruised and galled by riding, who (because she could not goe by any other meanes) had caused her selfe to be carried in a chaire to the sea coast, to take shipping, and that (if it pleased him to send after them) they might be both overtaken by the way.

The Count, although he were wearie, and his horses tired (having procured a Guide) would needs personally pursue them. Neither rode he five miles, when as he (ascending a hillocke) descried the she-slave in a chaire, who (seeing the horsemen) grew pale, and over-rane by the Count (who well knew her in the Admirals house) she besought him to kill her. But he (thereby better assured that she was the authresse of all the mischief) answered her; No, mischievous and accursed Traittresse, thou shalt not enjoy the happinesse of dying by my hand, it grieves me that there is no kind of death so cruell, as can equalize thy base offence. And inquiring afterward for the slave, he understood by the porters, that he was gon before to hire a barke; The Count therefore (leaving the woman in safe hold) spur'd a-maine to the sea-ward: but the slave (espying him descending a little mountaine) having already bespoken a Barke, imagined that those horses came for him; wherefore although all alone without any Mariners, who were gon to *Bossa* for provision, having got himselfe aboard the Barke, he waied anchor, spread sailes before the wind; whom, though most ignorant of that profession, feare made so cunning, as he was gotten more than two miles into the maine, ere the Count could gaine the sea shore; and (which was worse) there was not so much as one Barke with sailes to be found at the mouth of the river *Thirsis*, but onely small fishing boates unfurnisht of all things necessarie: Whereat this Count was ready to eate his fingers. But whilst he sent for a Barke to *Pisanco*, that of the slaves was in a short time borne away with the wind, so as although they had made after her, yet the night would have taken her out of the sight of such as pursued her.

The woman slave was sent backe againe to *Caleri* : and onwards went the Count to *Sassari*, when finding it shut, and calling to the Centrees, he was answered with a showre of arrowes; wherewith were kild eight of his horses, and many more hurt and wounded: Whereupon, perceiving the mischiete to be greater that he tooke it for (in that the subjects maintained with open Rebellion, the wicked actions of their Lord) he retired himselfe with all the speed he could; and having sent Scours to scoure the field, he received intelligence that the King of *Corfica* in person, was passing over into the Iland, with a great army: considering therefore that his stay there could be but disadvantageous (his horses being already all spoild) he determined to advertize thereof the King, and to retire himselfe to the first secure place.

In the meane time, the Princessse, who onely sate alone at the Helme of this weather-beaten ship, (having left part of the Lords of the Councell at *Caleri*, having given order for the marching onwards of the foot Companies) followed them with two thousand horse, her selfe being armed at all pieces, and mounted on a great Courser, having first commanded the she-slave to be surely lockt up in the bottome of a Tower; by meanes of whose confession came to bee knowne all that I have told you: and because wee shall come shortly to *Sardegna*, you shall there understand the sequell hereof, and (shall perhaps) see with your owne eyes, the generous actions of the fairest and stoutest Princessse the world enjoys.

Polimero, (who with twise so much sweetnesse had dranke of *Eromena's* perfections, by how much compassion he had listened to the Tragicke story of so worthy a Prince) thinking himselfe not as yet fully satisfied in mind, desired to know how the Princessse came to have the courage to practise, and use the handling of armes, an exercise not ordinary to her sex, and though she had naturally such a spirit and will, yet how came she to acquire an apt gesture and dexteritie to supply the weaknesse of her sex, when occasion required? Whereto the Pilot finiling, answered; Thinke not (Sir) that the resolution of our Princessse is void of reason, or insufficient to accomplish whatsoever she takes in hand; I confesse it is a thing extraordinary to her sex, but not to her: for know, that whilst she was yet a girle, and had no other brother, than the unfortunate Prince, shee even then, loved him, and he her so heartily deere, as their fraternitie became converted to a friendly society, most part of their time spent they together, neither had the one any conversation in his exercise more deare than his Sisters, nor the other any company more conformable to her inclination than her Brothers: whose childish games and delights, being (such as those of all Princes should be) representations of battels of armes and horses, she came (by the shadow) to such knowledge of the things reall, and substantiall, that there is not a Knight can, either in managing a courser, observe better his times and motions, or breake a Launce with a seemelier grace,

or brandish a Sword with greater cunning or dexteritie, than this our Princeesse.

Continued had they on this discourse (so much was *Polimero* therewith delighted) had it not beene broken off by the drawing neere of the Barke, by them a little before descried; whereunto seeing no body therein, they drew neere, and one of the Mariners boording her, found therein a man stretcht all along (by the pumpe) covered with many cloathes, and gasping for life; they (pittyng to see him in such a plight, and curious to know the occasion thereof) began to question him, but he opening his eyes a little, and then closing them againe, made them no answer; they hereupon (seeing him not any way wounded) thought that perhaps he wanted sustenance, so much the rather, when having searched the Barke, they found there, neither meat, nor drinke; therefore gave they him a little wine, and a while after a little more, till they saw him beginne to recollect his spirits, and recover some vigor; and withall (unclosing his eyes) mutter out some faint words, so as having made him a soppe (with the pith of bread sokened in Spanish wine) he willingly ate it, whereby he recovered such force, as turning up his face, he discovered himselfe to bee the Admirals slave, of the Pilot very well knowne; who was therefore the gladdest man in the world: yet without making any shew thereof, he commanded them to use all attendant diligence to restore him to himselfe, which they so performed, as in a short time he began to speake. The Pilot, seeing him restored to his disposition, caused him to be transported over into his ship, and the Barke to be tow'd; then after he had given him leave a good while to repose himselfe, he inquired of him, what he was? and by what accident he came to be so left alone? He (with his eyes inclined downewards) began to tell them a tale, without either beginning or end, and so by studying for matter, the more disclosed himselfe to be what he was, neither had they gotten ought else out of him, had not the Pilot (all disguise laid aside) said unto him, Art thou *Andropodo*, and knowest not me? yet well know I thee, thou Traitor. He then knowing him, prostrating himselfe, kneeled downe before him, saying, Pardon me (my Lord) for truly I knew you not in that habite you now weare; and sithence I am false into your hands, I beseech you rather to kill me, than bring me backe to *Sardegna*; For albeit I am no wayes guiltie of the *Prince* his death, neverthelesse, I assure my selfe that because I am the Admirals slave, my innocencie cannot save me: No more of this (answered the counterfeit Pilot) but tell us how comes it, that thou hast continued so long at sea? hast thou landed any where? Whereunto *Andropodo* (all quaking) made answer, that about some fortie dayes, sithence he embarked himself, during which time he had suffered all the miseries to a body humane insufferable, that the wind ever kept him (for the most part) in the maine sea, that sometimes he saw land, and had a good wind to come almost a shore, but that it changed in a moment, and that he (not having any experience in governing the sailes, and withall

withall being all alone) had escaped in many tempests the danger of drowning a thousand times ; but that his ill fortune had saved him, to make him die a death more miserable; that when he came aboard, he found in the Barke a little bread, which lasted him not two dayes. That on the *Sardegna* coast, hee met with some Fisher-men, and (a little farther that way) a ship of *Greece*, that furnished him with bisquet and a barrell of water, which he had wanted three dayes before. That the principall cause of his roving up and downe the sea, was sleepe, because the Barke abandoned of her Rother, ranne whither the wind carried her, so losing (whilst he slept) the way he had gained waking ; and beside, being in the midst of the sea, and not knowing on which part the land lay, he beleevd, that he ranne alwayes in a round , going perhap snothing at all, or very little wide from the same place. And finally, that his spirit failing him, he was stretch't along, expecting death, in manner as they found him. And being asked why he embarked not himselfe in the ship that sold him the victuals, he answered, that they would not take him aboard, for feare of the plague, whereof those of the East were very scrupulous, it being not lawfull for them, to commerce or trafficke without their patent of health, from the place whence they parted , with the precise number of the persons a-board them.

So be it a-Gods name (answered the Pilot) they have well done in not taking thee with them, to leave thee to me, who will bring thee where thou shalt receive the reward thy treasons merit. Which said, he caused him to bee bound, and set fast in the lowest part of the ship, to deprive him thereby of the meanes of doing himselfe any harme.

Polimero then (turning towards the Pilot, and smiling) said ; Sir, you have hitherto represented the personage of one, whom you are not : I pray you vouchsafe to favour me so much as fully to unmaske your selfe ; seeing this Villaine hath almost wholly discovered you.

The Knight (who till then had caused himselfe to be called Pilot) answered, I will obey you Sir, knowing you for such as may command me; for be pleased I pray you to know, that if you beleeve your selfe masked as well as I, you entertaine then an opinion that deceives you, you having not so soone set your foot a ship-board, but that I knew you for what you are.

My name is *Eterosilo*, and am *Marquesse* of *Chia*, a place on the sea coast on this part of *Sardegna*, bordering towards *Affrique*: I was the *Prince* his servant, to whose memorie I am so much indebted, as that I shall never more content my selfe in that I can no longer serve him. And as soone as (by the meanes of the conductors backe of the she-slave) the flight of this Villaine was knowne ; I resolved to goe to sea, (my heart telling me that I should finde him out) having verie well knownen him in the house of the Admirall, his master. I romed of purpose up and downe this sea, almost a moneth, without

being any thing the neerer of finding what I sought for, untill (assailed by a great tempest) I was constrained to save my selfe in the haven of *Birsa*. Where to avoid the being questioned of the affaires of *Sardegna* (whereof I was doubtfull, whether I might without danger relate any thing in neighbouring countries) I charged every one to call me by the counterfeite name of Pilot. And when I saw your servant enquiring out for passage in some ship, for two persons, and two horses; I know not what spirit prompt me (knowing him to be your servant) that he sought them for you, (putting then his hat off in reverent manner, he proceeded) which are the *Infant Polimero*, worthy sonne of the puissant King of *Mauritania*; wherein I thought my selfe exceeding fortunate, judging that in our tribulations, the gods had touched the heart of a youthfull *Prince*, (so like both in the vertues of the mind, and beautifull proportions of body to our deceased *Prince*) to come to the defence of *Sardegna*; so as it was no difficult matter for us to accord for the passage. And now (my Lord) behold us both unmasked. Here, as he would have kneeled downe before *Polimero*, he taking him by the hand, besought him not to discover him; telling him how he would (as unknowne) make one in those warres; moved so to doe, for the interest common to all Princes against Traitors, for the revenge due to the vertues of *Prince Perosilo*, and for the valour sake of a Princessse so renowned, as *Eromena*. And this was indeed the occasion of breaking off his intended voiage into *Ireland*.

Within two dayes then after, they landed safely in *Chia*, to the great pleasure and content of both parties.

The end of the First Booke of
 BIONDI'S EROMENA.



CAVALIER

GIO:FRANCESCO

BIONDI HIS

EROMENA

The Second Booke.



PRINCE *Metaneone* furrowed the surging waves, variously affected with content and griefe; both tormented with the remembrance of his offence, and comforted with the hope of finding out his Brother, to amend and recompence past defects, with contrary effects. The Count of Bona, exceeding consoled in seeing him so altered, and indeede partially obliged to rejoyce at the love of the Brothers, (as one who next the King his Father, claimed greatest interest in *Polimero*, for having bred him up from his infancie) confirmed him in his good intentions, being (as he already assured himselfe) not counterfeited, in that he made choise of him for a companion in his voiage, to be a testimonie of his actions.

The weather was cleare, whereat all the world seemed to joy, except the Galley-slaves, who, for being becalmed, were forc'd to ply their oares.

The Galley scowred away amaine course, seeming for her riches and curiositie of workmanship, to be some rare enchanted piece of excellency. She had her poope curiously carved with divers Histories of finest graven worke, gilt all over with gold; her pavement of Jewels, and richest mother of pearle; her hulke painted over with sparkling vermillion; her oares of the same, but done pompously from

from the midst downewards with golden flames; her beake, railes, and window-linternes proportioned to the devise of her poop; her mast and loope-holes gracefully adorned with banners, and flags of cloth of gold: on her foresaile flag-staffe hung of the same stuffe a goodly streamer, of such length, as it reach't downe to touch the very waves; her three lanthornes of marvellous invention, glittering with gold, afforded the greater lustre, because of the chrystal, cut diamond-wise; and artificially in-laid in their footstals, cubes and columnes: so as she seemed to such, as saw her a farre off, (both in shape and colours,) a fire Dragon with scales and wings of gold.

Two dayes sailed the *Prince*, without seeing any kinde of vessell saile before him, on the third he descried a galley, which espying that of the *Prince*, strove to gaine the shore. But doubting to be overtaken, she made off towards the West, thinking to escape by the benefit of the night: The *Prince* taking her for some Pirats ship (as she was indeed) commanded the Galley-slaves of his Royall, to row a-maine, and they (encouraged with hope of bootie) made her scoure little lesse than her full length betweene one stroake and the other.

Twenty miles off, were the Pirats descried by the little top-saile of their top-gallant; and the *Prince* making forward with extraordinary swiftnesse, (maugre all her force of oares) over-tooke her; whose Commanders seeing no meanes to escape, resolved to defend themselves, fearing to lose the great riches they had stolne before, and purposing to make head by tacking about, they could not doe it so soone, but that the *Prince* his Galley, running her full course, bore upon theirs at her poope; whence passing over her prow, she plung'd her up to the mast in the sea; but the vessell being good, got up a floate againe, receiving thereby no other harme, than the spoiling of some battlements, with the death and bruising of such as were so unfortunate, as to be on that side of her: In the same encounter, were many of the *Prince* his oares broken, a losse not recompenced with the gaine of the Galley, which with no great paines, and lesse bloudshed, fell into his hands. Then would he know what they were, and whence they came, whereto one of them answering for all, said, That they were of *Callo* of *Mauritania*, and that going with a Galley of theirs, to get some bootie, towards the coast of *Catalogna*, they were by an East winde driven to land on the strand of *Dragonera*, a little Iland of *Maiorica*; where having understood how that from *Porto Colombo* to the West part of the Iland, was to set out a Galley, sent from the King to his daughter; they made the best speed they could to rigge and dresse up theirs, which with bearing on the shore was almost all over crack't, and bruised: and that, having set themselves in ambush behind the cliffe of *Cabrera*, they had assailed her unawares, and (not farre off the haven) taken her, with the death of many, for that being constrained to leave behind them their owne Galley (which was unfit for any service) they had no roome on this other alone to set aboard both all their companie and

and the slaves too; And that yet for all they had kild none, but the more unserviceable, sparing the Knights, Ladies, family and servants of the *Princesse*; with an intention to goe thence to the rocke, where she was her selfe (to them very well knowne,) and thence to take her prisoner, whom they meant not to set free ere they had received for her an exceeding great ranfome.

Faine would the *Prince* see those prizes, and passing over therefore into their Galley, he found there certaine women, and among those the *Countesse* of *Palomero*, (the *Princesse* her Governesse) with foure Ladies of honour, and among the men six Knights.

The women rather dead than alive, as soone as they saw the *Prince*, kneeled downe before him, who courteously entertaining them, accompanied them in grieving for their misfortunes, yet joying in that hee was the meanes of their deliverance, he prayed them to acquaint him with their voiage, and the occasion thereof.

The *Countesse* (somewhat comforting her selfe, and assured by the Royall presence of the *Prince*, whom by many circumstances she thus judged to be such) said, My Lord, we, and those Knights are all Vassals and servants of the King of *Maiorica*, who having but one onely daughter (which is one of the fairest of the world) and shee retired into *Afrique*; sent us thither with all provision necessary to sojourn with her in that Countrey; but scarce had we issued out of the Port, when we were taken by these Pirates. The *Prince* (causing her (though unwilling) to sit her down with all the other Ladies) curious to understand the manner of the case, besought her to relate it him minutely and particularly, saying, that (being now freed) it would serve them to shorten and drive away the time. At which word they would all of them have kissed his hands, which he not permitting, but profering them all further courtesies possible, the *Countesse* (respectively thanking him with the termes of Noble gratitude) thus beganne.

Two yeares are now expired, sithence the King of *Sardegna*, treated of a Marriage betweene the *Prince* his Sonne, and the *Princesse Eromilia* our Mistresse; which was concluded on, to the great content of both parties, for the commodities of commerce, and neighbour-hood, but much more for the rare qualities of the bride-couple, being such, as (I beleeve) whosoever had searched over all the world, could not have found out such another paire; for *Perosfilo Prince* of *Sardegna* (besides the valour of his person) was by nature endowed with parts so excellent for beauty, feature, comelineffe and grace, as hardly meete all in one man alone. And for *Eromilia* our *Princesse*, Ile not only say that who so hath seene her, beleeves her to be for beautie matchlesse; but I will also, without error, affirme her to bee such, as needs not (in that regard) the favourable judgement of any.

The marriage then concluded, with hope of a speedie performance, she was by her hopefull Bridegroom visited by letters and

presents, whereunto she reciprocally corresponded, building a most ardent affection on the presumption of being his wife, and upon two of his pictures, the one limmed and painted, the other made of stuck, (this later, fully and proportionably representing his naturall lineaments:) It fell out afterwards, whilst the marriage for more than two yeares was (upon some unknowne occasion) deferr'd, that the infortunate *Prince* was by the *Marquesse* of *Sassari* (Admirall of *Serdegnia*) in the night time found a bed with his wife, and by him therefore slaine, which newes spread abroad in *Maiorica*, manifested the caule of so long putting off the marriage; which neuerthelesse was not sufficient to take away from our *Princesse* all occasion of griefe, as it had done to any other: whereas she no sooner heard it, than she sunke downe to the ground senselesse, and breathlesse, so as there was much adoe to restore her to her spirits, that had suddenly forsaken her. Impossible it is to expresse the extremitie of her lamentation, suffice it, that two dayes after she went her wayes, whither no body knew, except one very aged and trusty Priest of hers, who also (untill he was a good way of the Iland) never knew any thing of her resolution, (which was) to retire her selfe from the world, and never more to thinke of father and mother, realme, subjects, or ought else save onely on her dead husband, whom because she could not owne living, she resolv'd to enjoy now dead and gone, spending a coine quite contrarie to his, both in stampe and metal: for whereas he had obscured the puritie of his customes, by falsifying his faith (for love of another woman) before he had married her, she on the contrary, (though now a freewoman, and he dead and buried) would reserve her selfe constantly his spouse, resolved never to change her resolution for any mans sake in the world.

The good old man could not with any arguments perswade her to returne; he shewed how she (abiding in *Maiorica*) might accomplish her intention, telling her how that to goe wander about to seeke places of aboad in strange countries, was neither commendable nor secure for a woman of ordinarie condition, much lesse for a *Princesse*, ordained, both by birth and desert, to a royall dignitie; moreover that in so doing she could not please the gods; to whom she pretended to devote her selfe, within the limitation of whose service were not comprehended the disobedience and crueltie to parents-ward, who, without doubt, would for this occasion die with griefe; that her reason of neglecting her parents for divine love, was not in this case approueable, but that she should and ought to understand it rightly, in a wholesome construction, which was not to neglect their service for any affect of bloud, which ought not to be held in equall esteeme with them, who adnait of no comparatives, much lesse of superlatives in their love; and that under such a pretence to abandon our parents, (especially growne aged, desolate, and charged with a family) was rather to displease, than to serve the gods, who by the law they gave us by nature, require at our hands, reverence and obedience towards our parents, being strong, and vigorous, and

and pitty, comfort and sustenance, being become weake and impotent; and that then the eldest child ought, together with the family, sustaine and undergoe the charge and burthen of parents; and if this were the true meaning and manner of discharging on's dutie, even in private families, how much rather should it be observed in hers, that was Royall, wherein she being an onely child, had forsaken her parents (growne now aged) and with them also the whole kingdom being her family, which being by her means made an Orphan, lay subject to the tyranny of whosoever would oppresse it? Besides, that this resolution of hers sprang not from any true affection she had of serving the gods, but from a despaire and discontent, for seeing her selfe deprived of such a husband, whose companie she hoped would have endowed her with a blessed life; which effect she despairing to finde in any other, had suffered her selfe to be beguiled by her evill *Genius*, who perswaded her under the colour of pitty, to become cruell against father, subjects, and her owne selfe.

But to all these arguments, the good old man found her eares deafe: for she accompanied with one onely Damsell, and two of her ancient servants (by whose meanes she had found out that vessell, and put therein many things of her deerely esteemed, but especially the statue of the deceased *Prince*) passed over into *Affrique*; where landing at *Velez*, she bought of the Lord of that place, a Rocke, which she then caused to be named *Pegno della morte* (or the pledge of death:) whereupon she caused immediatly a Chappell to be built, with an intention to erect afterwards a Temple, by this time begun, where she intended to finish her dayes. By the Priests perswasion, she wrote to the King her father, to rid him from the anxietie and vexation of minde; wherewith he was troubled because of her departure.

Her father (somewhat consoled in seeing the evill was not so great as he beleev'd it to be, and hoping that time would alter her mind,) being informed of the situation of the place, and of the neighbouring inhabitants, would needs send her (although he knew it to be against her will) all her household, to the end he might therewith also furnish her with companie sufficient to defend her, from such as might goe about to take her into their power; and with these sent hee also some Masons, who under pretext of building the Temple, might fortifie and assure the place with strong wall-workes, which reared up on the accessible parts of the rocke, might be defended of a few persons: Howbeit before he sent us, he would know of every one of us, whether we were willing to goe or no; but there was not any one who was not willing to dwell in the fire, much lesse on a rocke, in the service of so gracious and amiable a Mistresse. Whereupon, the King having caused this galley to be rig'd up, and put in a readinesse, and set aboard therein all kind of household-stuffe hangings, and furnitures necessarie for a new house, besides a good summe of money; we departed, when on a suddaine (ere we could put our selves in defence) we were taken by these Pirats.

The *Prince* (astonished at a resolution so strange in such a *Princesse*, and enamoured of her extolled beautie, whereof he had also formerly heard talke of) bethought himselfe that he might conveniently now goe see her, the way to goe where she was abiding, being the selfesame course hee was to hold. Wherefore (after he had thanked the *Countesse* for the relation she imparted him) he told them all that (so it were not discommodious unto them,) they might without any feare abide still in that Galley, because of the great number of men aboard his, and wished them to see they had againe all their things (as well those of every particular person, as also those of their *Princesse*) restor'd them, whereof whatsoever was wanting, he would see by all meanes found out; promising them further, that their way being the same with his, he would not leave them, untill he had landed them safely in the place where resided the *Princesse*, whose hands he (conformable to the dutie of a Knight) was desirous to kisse, whereat they all kneeled before him on the ground, and to the *Prince* raising them up, the *Countesse*, after she had rendered him convenient thanks, thus spake on.

My Lord, in telling you the Historie of my Mistresse, I forgot one essentiall point thereof, which is, that after her resolution of going her wayes, and leading that kind of life she now lives, she made a third resolution, more strange than all the rest, which was, To remaine a whole yeare unscene of any mankind in the world, except such as were admitted to serve her: so that the King himselfe (her father) (desirous to come in person to bring her backe againe) chused rather (as the lesser evill) not to come, condemning that small time to the griefe of his daughter, who having experimented the bitternesse thereof, and vented the extremitie of her heavinesse, would (as he hoped) become more supple and pliant to wholsome perswasions. And of this (My Lord) I thought good to informe you, to the end that to you being so courteous, it might not seeme a discourtesie meant towards you, when you encounter an effect contrary to your desert. The *Prince* somewhat amazed hereat, courteously tooke his leave of them, sending the Pirats, being his subjects to the *Countesse*, to be by her chastised, as she thought good, who being importuned and pressed to accept them, and foreseeing the use and imployment her *Princesse* might have of slaves, caused them to be put to the chaines, abhorring to chastise them with any other punishment, though they well deserved it.

In the three dayes following, the *Prince* encountred with many vessels, of whom he could heare no newes of her he sought after. But now drawing neere to the *Pegno della morte* (which after a long progresse of time, I know not if by corruption of language or otherwise, it came to be called the *Pagnone*) he overtooke a ship of *Sardegna*, which in that she came not from *Birsa* made him somewhat penfive: whereupon the master of the ship said, (My Lord) if you desire to heare any newes of the *Sardegna* ship, that came from *Birsa*, I have here one can satisfie you, for I met her in her returne, and she

she belong'd to the *Marquesse* of *Chia*, of whom I obtained the favour of getting this young man (my brother) from aboard her; who will relate unto you, what he knowes, to satisfie you in what you shall please to require of him. The *Prince* and *Court* both (having questioned him particularly touching the passengers aboard that ship) comprehended by the qualities of the horse, and of the squire; but more probably by the features of the youth & respect borne him by the *Marquesse*, that without doubt, that same was *Polimero*, whereof they causing him to relate the same againe, were yet more than fully assur'd that it could be no other than he. *Metaneone* therefore the gladdest man now that ever he was all his life time, resolved (as soone as he had accompanied those people to their journies end, and seene the *Princesse*) to steere thence to *Sardegna*.

Arrived at the *Pegno*, he would not come a shore for feare of displeasing the *Princesse*; but calling one of her Knights, whom in that small time his good liking reputed confident, he said unto him;

My Lord *Perseno*, one thing that I desire most in this world, is to serve your Lady the *Princesse*, it grieves me that I may not be permitted personally to offer her my service to such an honest and honourable end, as befits a Knight of my qualitie; seeing that her vow forbids me it: It would grieve me extremely to part without seeing her, I'll therefore intreate you to further me to the accomplishment of my desire. And seeing she is resolved to see no man, I will not bind you to an impossibilitie, but onely to bring me to see her without letting her know it; wherein I promise you not to stray from your directions.

Perseno (that held himselfe obliged to the *Prince*, and well conceived the honestie of his intentions,) made him this answer.

My Lord, so much I hold my selfe obliged unto you, for the favour you shew me in commending me, that if I owed you not that great obligation, (as doe all the rest in generall, and withall the *Princesse* her selfe, my Mistresse) yet were this a sufficient tie to oblige me eternally; howbeit, I beseech you, give me leave to tell you, that I cannot as yet absolutely promise you any thing in this purpose, having not as yet seene the *Princesse*, nor knowing how she lives, neither am I acquainted with the place whereby I might make use of such occasions as would be requisite in such a businesse: but if you please to give me time to see her, and to discover and observe her manner of life, I promise you then, that I will endeavour to obey you, to the utmost of my power, assuring my selfe, that you will not command me any thing wherein I may not serve you without blemishing my honour.

The *Prince* well satisfied with the reasons of *Perseno*, told him that he would willingly attend, and withal would not stray from his directions. Afterwards, having sent for the *Countesse*, he told her he was glad that she was safely arrived to her Lady and *Princesse*, to whom though he could not be permitted to come to kisse her hands (as his duty bound him) he hoped neverthelesse to be favored with

some command of hers, ere his departure, which would be about three dayes thence, during which time he had need to repose his Galley-slaves, that he might then after hold on a straight course to *Sardegna*, where he hoped to finde out his Brother.

The Lady (who was of right noble behaviour) answered him; that she found her selfe confused in the confused being and state of her Mistresse, for that she well knew, that to suffer him to depart thence, without being for his noble favours, courteously thanked by her her selfe, was no otherwise than to satisfie a great obligation with the coine of a greater ingratitude, and therefore besought him to be pleased to excuse with the perfection of his courtesie, the imperfection of the times, and to assure himselfe that she (for her part) would not faile to manifest to the *Princesse*, to the King her father, and to all the world, how deeply, and for how great a good turne she remained engaged to his Highnesse. Whereunto the *Prince* replied, that he deemed himselfe most happy, in being so fortunate, as to happen to doe so slender a service for so worthy a *Princesse*, for which he pretended no other guerdon, than the favour of her commands, that he might more effectually serve her, and so tooke his leave, abiding below without offering either to goe up himselfe, or permit any other to ascend the Rocke.

The *Princesse* (in the meane time) according to the custome of melancholy folkes (who either stand stone-still, or else are never quiet nor content with any place) roaming up and downe, (now here, now there) about the upper part of the rocke, vouchsafed not once to move herselfe at the newes, which was brought her of the splendor descried afarre off, although it made towards, and drew neere that place; till seeing the Galley appeare from under the cliffe, and marvelling at a piece so rich and gallant, she could not chuse (for all her grieve) but behold it, yet fretting with her selfe for giving her senses way, to taste of the least content, (contrarie to her resolution made, of never taking delight in any thing) she returned to her lodgings, become (in respect of its garnishment, situation, and solitarinesse) gastly and hideous to behold; she could not beleieve that they were company sent her from her father, for well knew she that his *Arcenall* affoorded no such Galleyes. And whilst she, curious to know whose it was, was angry with her selfe for being curious; desirous to rest naked of any other affect, than of grieve alone, *Gierosando* the Priest came unto her, with newes, that the *Countesse* of *Palomera* was at the foot of the rocke (with all those of her household, sent her from her father) accompanied with a great *Prince*.

Eromilia (doubtfull in her minde, what she should doe, and wrought on by the tenderesse of her affections, being not altogether indulgent, nor yet altogether repugnant to her naturall inclinations) knew not whether she should rather joy for the comming of the *Countesse*, (her Governesse) or fret her selfe, that any *Prince* would (contrarie to her deliberation) proffer to come to that place. Neverthelesse, the stocke of her naturall prudence remaining yet lively,

lively, after being awhile amazed to see her household come unsent for, imagining the cause thereof, which displeased her not, in that she began already to conceive the danger she incurr'd in, by living so alone, she made no other answer, than that the *Countesse* was welcome, and that she onely should be admitted to come to her. But that for strangers, he well knew himselfe, that she could not be seene of her owne father, and therefore referr'd to him the satisfying of that *Prince* in that behalfe.

Whilst then with crooked and tortuous interrogations *Gierofando* endeavoured to tell her what she required not; thither came the *Countesse*, whom the Priest went to meet, conducting her in, all-alone. The teares (here shed) were in such abundance, as there was not for a good while any roome left for speech: but as soone as any was, the wittie Lady (knowing that the time served but to things generall) presented her with the letters of the King and Queene, giving her withall succinct newes of the houses, of such things as were sent her by her father, and of the love of the family. The *Princesse* (mollified in affection) would needs see them all, who came one by one to kisse her hands, waxen so moist with the teares of every one of them, as she could not restraine hers.

The *Countesse* then afterwards related unto her, how they had beene taken by Pirats, and freed by the *Prince* of *Mauritania*, extolling the humanitie of his behaviour, his Royall manners, and the features of his person; acquainting her further of the desire he had to kisse her hand, or at least, to receive from her some command, ere his departure thence.

The *Princesse* answered, she was sorry she could nor might not see him, to acknowledge the obligation she owed him. But hoped, that (he being a courteous Knight) would accept of her excuses, in stead of more essentiall reasons. With which embassage, to satisfie him in that behalfe; she willed there should be sent him some Knight (in her name) such as should to the *Countesse* seeme fittest.

The *Countesse* having observed in their voiage, the affectionate inclination the *Prince* had shewed towards *Perseno*, caused him to be called in, to whom the *Princesse* said.

Perseno, the *Countesse* hath told me what great favour, both I and all you have received at the hands of the *Prince* of *Mauritania*, and how by his meanes have beene saved, both your lives and liberties. If I were now, as heretofore I have beene, I would endeavour with my owne mouth to assure him, how highly I esteeme his favours; but I being now no more my selfe, am (among other defects) disabled herein (which at this present inwardly grieves me) my present estate being more capable of receiving, than in doing courtesies; and seeing (because of my vow) I may not see any man, I cannot therefore content my selfe, in partly satisfying so great a service.

Then (wiping off her teares which the imagination of her melancholy made her powre out in abundance) she further said.

I can tell you no more, you know my minde, and therewithall the condition

condition of my hard fortune, you shall therefore with your speech, supply the defect of mine. And because the place is not furnished with any thing worth the presenting him, nor my selfe stored with any thing to honour him withall, you shall endeavour to assure him of the griefe I conceive thereof. Afterwards, when shee had opened her fathers letter, she found it thus said.

Onely and beloved daughter, by your absence have I obscurely ghesse, and by your letters clearly understood of the strange resolution by you undertaken, so that if I knew you not well, or beleevd not that I knew you more than passing well, I know not what I could thinke of you; for first, for the losse of one thing in hazard or uncertaine, and which might well not be (that is, your husband) you have despised many things certaine, and which could not chuse but be; and such am I, your mother, our subjects and kingdome. And albeit the gods have endued you with a spirit transcending the ordinary, neverthelesse I beleve for a certaine, that if a man would at this present demand your reason, why you have so done, you would answer him with *I cannot tell*, and therefore the first essence that was in you is necessarily corrupted, seeing the actions thereon depending are corrupted: for although it were granted, that the *Prince of Sardegna* had beene already your husband, and that the possession of his person had redoubled your love, yet what reason should move you to grieve for him in such a fashion, as that because you cannot enjoy him, you will not enjoy the world? Nay, though even this were also granted you, yet who will grant you, that you may live, and not live to the world? If then you ought to make use of the world, then ought you doubtlesse to exchange a Cliffe for the Iland *Baleari*, which ought to be so much the worthier of your ashes, by how much the neerer they are to the tombes of those you love so well: And though your judgement were so unequall, as to judge, that you ought for the place where you are, leave the place where you should be, and that you may live, and yet not live to the world: yet tell me (I pray you) what reason, what law, or what god have ever heard grant or allow such injustice, offence, or crueltie, as you, an onely daughter, use towards me your father, that never gave you any occasion therefore? Which if you had no reason to have done, although I had used you ill, what cause or colour have you then for it, knowing that I esteemed you not onely as a daughter, but as mine owne heart, you being withall even in my life's time (excepting the title) *Soveraigne Queene* of my people? In that you loved him, that was to be your husband, it is a signe of a good and laudable nature, I blame you not therefore; but to have so loved him, as because you cannot love him any longer, you will not love either me, or any other, you shall finde this to be an obstinate contradiction of nature: You say, you are retired, because you would not be interrupted in your griefe; Truly if nature were as constant as she's variable in our affections, then had you wisely deliberated, and I would have therefore commended you; for if a man could shunne all griefes for the price

price of one griefe alone, though the same were most violent, doubtlesse he ought to purchase it at any rate, because it is impossible that it can of its nature last long : and passions passe away even as pleasures doe, though not so soone, which though they did not, yet paines, abstractions, and busineses, but (above all things) time (extenuating it by little and little) would at length reduce it to nothing. Whence it proceeds, that who so beleeveth to prefix and give himselfe a law for his life, founded upon a running griefe, imagining it to be everlasting (as you have done) such an one doth not onely deceive himselfe; but also (as soone as his understanding is cleared from the cloud of passion) he first repents himselfe thereof, and then looks in the face of his owne ignorance, which instructs him how humane nature is changeable in all things, and yet rather in love, than in hatred. But let us suppose it be not so, and let's grant, that you may be in time possessed, if not of a greater griefe, at least of a more worthy resolution, occasioned by some danger of your honour, of my death, of the losse of your subjects, and of many other accidents which cannot be imagined : Tell me, which of them would you judge more worthy the entertaining, the first, or the last ? That which toucheth you very neere, or that which nothing at all concerns you ? That, whereto you (applying the remedy) may bring to nothing, or that, which (being irremediable) can receive no other being than that of your imagination ? But yet, this is not all, it is a thing ordinary for one evill to produce many others. Your unreasonable griefe may beget desperation, and desperation the loathing of all things ; hence sprung your disobedience, your stealing away, your new course of life, and finally your vow of depriving your selfe of your selfe, and of seeing you, every man (my selfe not excepted.) If this be the ladder to climbe up to heaven, and the way to please the gods, as you pretend, then would I thinke that humane actions were to them indifferent, and that their favour might be acquaired as well by working iniquitie, as by doing good and vertuous deeds. Perceive you not, alas, what opinions your actions manifest you to hold; (which is) to forme by degrees this monstrous, horrid and blasphemous consequence ? If you had a desire to serve the gods, how then to marrie ? Or will you, that I beare something with your love (truly lawfull, and in its limits vertuous ?) well, I am so content ; but what hinders you to serve the gods, abiding at home in your owne house ? Are *Maiorica* and *Minorica* not to your liking, for being more spacious and fairer than your *Pegno della morte* ? And why so I pray you ? Have the gods (perhaps) such eyes as we ? Or respect they more the outward appearance than the inward realitie ? Thinke you that they esteeme more an erected Temple, than a contrite heart ? No surely, we may as well serve the gods in our delicious and sumptuous palaces, as offend them in Caves and Deserts : yet can you not say that you want such, because you have the *Cabrera* and *Dragonera*, whither you might have retired your selfe with greater reason ; with greater (I say) in that where you now

are, you are deprived of all safety: possessing in your person and quality, and carrying with you so many silent invitations, as might tempt all such to endeavour to have you in their power, as shall come to know, *how* that you being beautifull, a *Princesse*, and heireffe to the Crowne, are retired alone without any guard, to a Rocke not defended otherwise than by winds, the Sunbeames, and the injurie of the weather: yet your misfortune would be farre lesse (though nevertheless exceeding great) if you hapned to fall into the hands of a *Prince*; but if fortune should make you a prey of theeves and Pirates, What would then become of you? For such would sell you and make you of a free woman a slave, and of a Mistresse a servant; all which is (you will say) nothing to a mind resolutely indifferent. But can you find in your heart to rancke among those indifferent things your honour and virginitie? Consider how you are invironed with most potent Kings, if any one of them had a desire to take you away, I see not how you could defend your selfe from them; which if they enterprized onely to deprive you of your widdowhood, it would prove a great ill hap: But how are you assured that they will not take you first away, and then (under the pretence of having you) impudently deprive me both of Realme and life? There are now warres in *Sardegna*, which by all reason expects aide from vs: If *Ep'camedo* King of *Corfica* become Lord thereof, (as I doubt he will,) he (being a lover of beautie) hath courage enough to claime interest in yours, seeing he is already wroth at the *Princesse Eromena*, and is a man like enough to aspire (with the incorporation of *Sardegna*) to the dominion of all the other Ilands, and of ours also together with your person. And if you be not here, what resolution can I make; fearing allwayes, that I shall neede relerve for your rescue such souldiers as I should send to succor *Sardegna*? No other persuasions (daughter) will I use towards you: onely I pray you so to strippe your selfe of your passion, as being freed therefrom, you may partly judge of things as other times you have done. I will not thereto compell you (although I might;) but will in some things dispense with your griefe, which I pray you endeavour the best you can to shorten. In the meane time (for the shunning of the imminent dangers of your person) I herewithall send you men, and money, to the end that you might, to save your selfe from death, blocke your selfe up in your *Pledge of death*. I send you all your household, because all of them would needs come serve you, notwithstanding all recompence that I (without service) offered to each of them in particular. But above all (I pray you) honour the Countesse of *Palomera*, and esteeme her as a mother.

Much was the *Princesse* astonished at the reasons of this letter, especially when she more lively considered the danger, wherein she stood, wherefore she resolved, as soone as her husbands funerall rites were solemnized, to wall about the rock on the parts of its ascent, being every where else so fortified by nature, as it needed not to be doubted of. *Perseno* in the interim joyfull for the commandement he had

had received, went to present the *Prince* with his embassage, who (after corresponding of affectionate discourses) thus said unto him. And must I then (my kinde friend) depart hence without seeing your Lady the *Princesse*? I much doubt it (answered *Perseno*) unless you would vouchsafe to abase your selfe to doe one thing I have thought of; without the which it is impossible that any man in the world come to the sight of her: And (being demanded what that was) he proceeded, saying,

Two things my Mistresse intends to doe; the one is the Dedication of her Chappell, for the celebrating of sacrifice; the other, the solemnization of *Prince Pirofilo's* funerall, when (among other ceremonies) she will, that all, aswell her Knights as Squires, be cloathed (conformable to the custome of our Countrey in the like occasions) in a mourning garment with a *Cappuccio* or hood which covers the face, saving the eyes; for whose use there is an opening in that part reserved. What I have thought of, is, to give you mine, and to take for my selfe one of one of my servants; If this device please you, the matter is then accomplished; for to conduct you in, is a thing I can easily performe.

The *Prince* (embracing him) with great joy told him, that hee could not have thought on a better meanes, desiring to have it by all meanes effected. The order they therefore tooke was, that the *Prince* should launch out thence, to some place not farre off, and that within six dayes then after (which was the terme prefixt) leaving his Galley behinde him, he should come in a Frigat about midnight, there (shewing him the place with his finger) where he with a little Barke would be ready to receive him. Which concluded on, *Perseno* returning to the *Princesse*, reported unto her such speeches, which even of blinde folkes could not be taken for other than conceits of curtesie, & by a good eye might easily be discerned to impleie conceits of love, neither displeased they her; for that truly gentle hearts are ever ambitious of other mens good opinions. But the *Countesse* pleased they exceedingly, who earnestly desired that some new affection of some effectuall love in her Lady and *Princesse*, might rid the old of it's desperate humor: for the better grounding whereof she neglected not the opportunitie of extolling the *Prince*, with such commendations, as had beene sufficient to have enamoured any heart not obstinately resolved not to love at all.

Now the time for reposing the Galley-slaves being expired, the *Prince* caused the *March* or *Levata* to be sounded, continued with the consort of all his trumpets, with such exquisite melodie, that the hollow concavities of the rocke thereat resounding, the ecchoes were heard make answer from every part thereof. Whereupon every one ran out to see the Galley, except the *Princesse*, who was jealous lest her grieve should grow to be displeased with her, for adventuring her selfe to the gust of a curious sight; yet would she have the *Countesse* goe thither with the rest, to whom (refusing to goe, and leave her all alone) she said,

Mother, the time that was is now no more, solitarinesse is now my pastime: And albeit you are (as you know your selfe to be) right deare unto me; neverthelesse seeing I hate my owne company, the being deprived of anothers cannot grieve me: Recreate your selfe then, and take no care of me, and so shall you best please me, for in doing otherwise you will displease me. Whereat the *Countesse* exceedingly forrie, without any more words went out.

Then stood the Galley beaten upon by the beames of the Sunne in her glittering parts, so as she seemed with her splendors to warre against *Phabus*, and to dart to him-wards, as many radiant glimps, as she received of him. Being afterwards disanchored, whilst the ghinge stood readie with oares in hand at the whistle of the Boat-swaine, she saluted (according to the custome) the place thrice with cries and trumpets; the windowes above them appeared full of Ladies and Knights, that standing bare saluted the *Prince*, who requiting them with the like, and causing the ghing plie the water with their oares in tenne stroakes vanished out of the Port: whence passing the *Promontory* towards the East, landing at *Budem* twentie miles off, he smiling said to the *Count*, What thinke you? Have we not made a long dayes journey? And upon this acquainting him of what he meant to doe, he there entertained himselfe untill the day appointed, which seemed to him a tedious yeares time. but then having armed and mann'd a Frigat with men and oars, he went aboard her, taking a speciall care when he came neere the rocke, to glide on so silently that the noise of rowing might not discover him: arrived to the place appointed, he had no cause to attend, for there found he the diligent *Perfeno* with a little Whirry, wherein both of them passed over to the Rocke, having first taken order, that the Frigat should returne the night following to the selfesame place to fetch him backe againe. Thence gotten up on high with no small paines to the *Prince*, being unacquainted with that steepie ascent, the night being also darke and not otherwise illuminated than by starlight; he slept that night with *Perfeno*, because he could not be better accommodated, yet was so merry in that he hoped to obtaine his desire, that he never thought of any toile or discommoditie.

The day come, the *Princesse*, who slept little or nothing, rose up early in the morning, and after the Chappell was dedicated (which was without any ceremony, and where the *Prince* could not be admitted to come) every one retired himselfe to his owne lodgings, till such time as the funerall Beere was put in order.

Then appeared the *Princesse* in the Hall, where the ceremony was to begin, clad in a blacke gowne straight wasted with large sleeves, and so long, as they reached downe to the ground; it was lined quite through with whitesilke cipres, pleated and crisped about the necke, with a deepe fringe round about it: the body of her garment, and the sleeves of her wascot, were cut from the highest to the lowest part thereof, and rejoined with small blacke loope-lace, betweene which cuts the same cipres came puckering out in equall small pleats; attracting

attracting the eies of the beholders with the comelines of her person, the strangeness of the habit, and the proportion of contrary colours; her head, necke, and brest were covered with a kind of robe of exceeding fine linnen, foulded in waves, which reached no further downe than the knee: her sweete face restrain'd in its owne confines, had allowed it for observers and keepers (as it was not fit it should be left all alone) some few of her faire haire, which the more they were confus'd in the *Chaos* of so comely a melancholy, the more orderly were they disposed to proportionate the fairest of all other beauties: yet were they no golden haire, because nature foreseeing or peradventure emulating those accidentall colours of her habit; & being desirous to sute naturally the same devise, had framed her countenance as white as the driven snow, and her haire like the glittering browne of finest silke; this robe of hers, together with her face were covered all over with a transparent veile; which although it was blacke, yet did it not moderate, but rather augment those singular beauties: that being neither altogether apparant, nor yet altogether hidden, could not either be concealed in their being shadowed, or conceived in their full perfections; for their raies, penetrating through the pores of the heart, made themselves known, and yet dazling the eyes of the capacitie depriv'd it of the meanes of well-knowing and fully discerning them. This her habit was embellished with the pearles that drop'd in chaines from her chrystall eyes, which (united together in a milke-white piece of fine linnen under the black veile) were motives sufficient to change even mirth and laughter it selfe into plaint and grieve.

The family came to the Hall a little before, to waite on their Mistresse, and among them *Metaneone* and *Perseno* in the very instant of her comming forth of her chamber (as private as they could to shun the occasion of discourse with any one.) The *Prince* seeing appeare such a tree cloath'd with a shadow, purpurized under the obscuritie of veiles, betweene two contrary colours (no otherwise than *Aurora* when she begins (at the approach of the Sun-beames) to shew forth her ornamentall graces, having besprinkled the eyes attracted with unknown violence, in stead of dew with a treasure of teares, signes (not obscure, of an amorous heart) became thereat so astonished, as that if he had beene so forgetfull of the qualitie of the place, as he was of his owne condition, hee had no doubt in that place quite forgotten himselfe. But *Perseno* (that with a vigilant eye beheld him) seeing him beginne to stagger, set him right againe by bringing him to himselfe with a becke; Iust as a generous Courser (forgetting his exercise) is suddenly brought in againe by the voice and hand.

In the midst of the Hall stood a *Beere*, representing the body of the dead *Prince* raised up from the ground, with a large *Beere*-covering of blacke velvet, fringed round about with divers Tropheies of armes and instruments of warre, with the *Escocheons* of *Sardegna* and *Maiorica* quartered, and richly embroidered with gold at each of

it's foure corners. The superficies of the Beere-cloath was sprinkled all over with drops of bloud, represented to the life by a curious hollow-stich of vermilion filke. The Hall hang'd all over with blacke Arras, not onely the walls, but also the ceiling and pavement thereof. So as amongst all these obscure colours, there was not any white discernable, but onely that which (shaming all blacks) was not onely transparent, but resplendent from under the veiles of the *Princesse*.

At one end of this Hall right over against the *Beere* stood placed a Canopy of State, with a little bench, and two great cushions, all covered over with blacke velvet: here stood still the *Princesse*, and kneeled downe; where after she had a while fixed her waterie eyes to heaven-wards, then (as if she hated the light) bent them downe-wards to celebrate the funerall, weeping out amaine such musicke, as with it's mournfull and compassionate tone, drew humid lamentations from the driest eyes.

Metaneone uncertaine with himselfe, whether he was in a dreame, or awake, nere tooke his eyes off the *Princesse*, and (forming in his minde a rapsody of the things he saw) was not aware that he saw them, so great was the confusion hee tossed too and fro, in his minde.

The musicke ended, there were distributed torches, which (though of pure white wax) were yet all artificially made obscurely browne. Then the Priest, having first invocated the God of gods with the attributes of onely incomprehensible, and eternall, thus prayed:

Receive (O Lord) our prayers, and accept our teares, which because they are not worthy of thy sight, vouchsafe to make them worthy, for thy mercies sake; seeing we, because of our corruption, cannot make them worthy, but acknowledge thee to be both the worke, and the workeman, the beginning and end of all things, and that in thee is perfect happinesse, which we hope to enjoy in thee, by thee, and with thee, for ever and ever.

Which said, taking out of a golden Chalice, a spoonefull of most pretious sweete incense, he powred it on the kindled embers, that stood by him in a great vessell of silver, and then made a signe to them all to stand up, and goe forward with their tapers lighted; those of meaner qualitie going first in rancke, were followed by such as carried the *Beere*; next after which followed the *Princesse* herselfe with her Ladies.

The little Chappell was all over illuminated with no other light than wax candles, having its windowes shut up with cloath curtains, to make the ceremonies seeme more lugubrious, and the office more devout: In the end thereof stood a great Altar, hung round about with blacke velvet, whereon in stead of fringe, were richly embrodered divers trophies of death. On this Altar was not any god, onely there stood fastened in the wall a large Tablet of delicate picture-worke, whereon with astronomicall proportions was represented the Vniverse: in whose poles stood two hands full of light,

light, that gave it motion, made in such a fashion as they seemed to be of a greater body than the world. And this body became invifible by being hidden by the interposition of the machine of the universe, but much more by its owne splendent raies; the distance betweene these raies were filld up with good Angels, having sundry coloured wings, and about it might be reade,

*And in perpetuall working I
Finde sweete repose eternally.*

As soone as they came hither, they laid downe the Beere upon a rais'd-worke mourning Coverlet, adorned with many pieces of armes. The Priest having in his hand a silver vessell (that hung at small chaines of the same, wherein was finest incense on fired coales) went thrise about the Beere, invoking the greatest *Iove*. Whereto being answered by the Quire of musicke, he made a stand before the Altar, where (after a long silence) lifting up his eyes towards heaven, he said:

O Lord, that art the true love wherewith thou joineest together in an invifible society, the things become incorruptible and immortall, we pray thee so to strengthen us as that wee being divided from our corruptible and mortall parts, may comfort our selves in thee, which art our only life and comfort: (and then putting more incense on the fire of the Altar, he spake on.) Kindle (O Lord) our soules with thy ardent fire, that we being rid of the desire of terrestriall things, may withdraw our selves from them, and trust onely in thee; Let our prayers (for thy goodnesse sake) ascend up to thy sight, even as this incense by its nature mounts upwards; and as its odour is pleasing unto us, so let our prayers be acceptable unto thee. Let all the dead live in thee, together with him for whom we now pray, that though they be severed from us at this present in the diversitie of their essence; yet that when we become conformable to them in essence eternall, we may joyne with them to praise thee world without end. To this the musicke (answering, So be it o God we beseech thee) sung an interchangeable quire consort, in a time so dolefull as might move to plaint and heavinesse the merriest disposition.

In the meane time got up the *Princesse*, and *Metaneone* (before advertized by *Perseno* to whom that duty belonged) was ready to helpe to raise her; supporting her to his so great content, as he might well in disparity (or in a contrary kind) contend to paralell her discontent.

Come to the Altar, she taking in her faire hands the Incense, and laying it on the fire, returned, all the rest imitating her in doing the same; which finished she role up againe, and causing the statue of *Persilo* to be carried onwards with great solemnity, she causing it to be laid in a Presse, made for that purpose, thus said,

Behold (My Lord) the last duties of your Spouse, it pleaseth the heavens that it so be, and therefore must needs please me. I once hoped to serve you in another manner, and to place you elsewhere in an other-ghesse shape. But sithence it so pleaseth my cruell disdain, that in stead of your noble person, I may enjoy but your shadow

shadow and picture; behold me most ready and willing so to live all my life time. The Bride-chamber (My Lord) is denied you, but not the *Elysian Fields*. And I taking thence example, knew not where to place your Image in a fitter place than this, which being dedicated unto the eternall, it is fit your Image should have another like here on earth. Which said, she with many teares, retired to her lodgings, wherehence all the rest retired to theirs.

The *Prince* of *Mauritania* having laid aside his roabe, and caused *Perseno* (whether he would or no) to sit downe by him, thus bespake him; I have received from you (My Lord) so notable a peece of service, as I will never forget it whilst I breathe; I pray you continue your good inclination to me-wards, whereby (I assure you) you shall reape nought else but honour; I part hence so enchained to the beauties and noble behaviour of your Mistresse the *Princesse*, as I doubt to die thereof; though I am more affraid that the selfesame will betide her, if she obstinately persevere in such an unreasonable and desperate way of Melancholy. My intent is to demand her of the King her father; but I doubt it will prove but lost labour, unlesse she alter her opinion: I am not of my selfe a man to resolve of any thing, without your advise, as well for my ingagement to your Highnesse, as also because I finde my selfe an insufficient Counsellor in this businesse, being onely capable to receive it from you.

Perseno (desirous to stand up, but retain'd by the *Prince* in his seat) made answer; (My Lord) you have no cause to thinke your selfe obliged to me, sithence you well know, that I by your meanes enjoy both libertie, and life ~~is safe~~: which though it were not so, yet would I nevertheless beseech you to command me, because in so doing, you much oblige me. Besides you may well judge, that the little service I did you, tended indeed to the service of my Mistresse; and therefore the foundations of what you thinke your selfe obliged for to me-wards, is quite demolished. For I fore-thought (most excellent *Prince*) that you becomming enamored of her (as I was sure you would be, considering her perfections) might prove a meane to divert her from her so strange a course of life. Because her being sought for, by so great and worthy *Prince*, as your Highnesse is, might open a way to the businesse of freeing her hence. Of your resolution of demanding her of the King her father I approve right well, which the sooner it be done, would be the better; albeit I could wish it were caried in such a fashion, as the demand might not occasion any delay, (that is) that she were demanded by the gracious mediation of the King your father, and that with his owne privy: because since such must be the issue of it, it is as good it be done first as last; as well to eschew losse of time, as also because the businesse may goe forwards under the shadow, protection and dignitie of both parties. Neither should her present humor give you any cause of discouragement, because (hap the worst that hap may) we cannot be in worse plight than we are.

And

And assure your selfe that when you have gotten the goodwills of both kings (your father and hers) you will soone obtaine her consent or no man breathing can ever gaine it. Nay, we may well hope that when she understands her selfe to be sued for by you, to whō she is so much obliged, she may be more easily bent to a contrary resolution, rather for yours than for any other mans sake. Neither is this the sole reason that moves me thereto, for know (most excellent *Prince*) that my mistresse lives herein exceeding great danger; the fame of her beauty is spread far and neere, many Kings have sued to have her, so that some one of them requiring her of her father may deprive you of her; or some other (considering her resolution) may resolve to take her hence by force; whereas if you demand her in time, you may then prevent the one, and the other hazard an inconvenience: for the King her father will not deny her you; especially when the *Countesse* and I have written unto him in such a manner, as we shall make him not onely desirous, but also know himselfe obliged to grant her you: and as for others, when they come to know her to be yours, they will alter their intention of molesting her. Now for the *Princesse*, I reply, that her resolution should neither hinder nor discourage you, because she is (*in fine*) a woman, and therefore subject to change, even as we are also. Neither can such a change be upbraided her, it being from worse to better, besides her being subject to her father, and obliged to the subjects as Heireesse. And for what lies in my power, I neede not tell you any more, but that you see already that I am so far from pretending to oblige your Highnesse, as I remaine therefore exceedingly obliged unto you for this, above all other engagements, whereby I am already tied unto you. And if you yet (like a noble *Prince*) will needs for all this hold your selfe my debtor, yet shall it be satisfied by your following my counsell, and hastning with all possible speed the execution thereof.

The *Prince* embracing him about the necke, expresses his thankfulness with the most affectionate tearmes that could be, and (pursuing their discourse) asked him, what new and strange manner of service was that which the *Princesse* used in worshipping the gods? Wherto *Perseno* answered, my Mistres, as in materiall things she hath not any one thing ordinary or common unto others; so also in the vivacity of spirit there is none can paragonize or equall her; for she, (not contenting herselfe with the common opinion) examines the causes of things with such an elevated judgement, as there is not a *Philosopher* that can paralell her in the speculation of them. And that which above all other things makes her curious, is not onely the varietie, but rather the contrariety of opinions, almost in all ages, and those stiffely maintained by all such as were by the world esteemed for the wisest men, so as it might (not without good reason) be concluded, That *humane wisdom is meere folly and hath no certaine foundation*. And if any man were more prized than the rest, it was not because he had reason to procure him better estimation; but because nature made him more acute than others in *Philosophizing*, and

in the art of speaking more *dialectically* in perswading. I will give you a touch of my Mistresse her opinion in the generalitie of things, to the end you may imagine that the particulars degenerate not a whit therefrom. To this her sound judgement shee hath conjoynd a Prince-worthy erudition; because shee hating superficiall and seeming disciplines, which puffes up the understanding, embraces the *solid*, wherein consists reall and true knowledge; And albeit *Philosophizing* on the gods bee somewhat dangerous, being it is dangerous to pronounce the truth, in that wee cannot set it forth but according to our capacitie, whence proceeded (not without some ground) that saying, *that the truth thereof is best knowne by being not known*: yet is it nevertheless lawfull for us to know so much thereof, as Pietie and Religion permits us; for if wee were thereof altogether ignorant, then would there not bee among us either devotion or Religion.

About some two yeares sithence came from *Lucania* (I know not by what accident) that Priest you saw in the Temple, who being (besides his knowledge and learning) a man of an upright mind, and exemplary life, was bestowed on her by the King, to the end that by his conference she might be assisted and furthered in her studies, wherein they are come to such a pitch, as they have concluded, that the opinion of many gods is false, and that there is no more but one, and him such a one, as no understanding can conceive in that he transcends the limits and reach of our intellects. And that is the reason you saw no Image in the Temple. The picture (that is there) represents the whole world; and the two hands the providence of God, or God himselfe: forasmuch as he is the motor and originall cause of all causes. The bloud sacrifices are abominable in Gods sight, neither ought he be otherwise worshipped, than with odoriferous and sweet smelling offerings.

The *Prince* (marveiling not a little hereat) with a smiling cheere, said; Your Lady (the *Princesse*) being farre from superstition and vanity, and doubting lest she her selfe should for her divine qualities be reputed a goddesse will have but one God *invisible*, and *incorporeall*; but this beliefe shall not enter so farre in me, but that I will adore her. Whereupon enterchanging together pleasant discourses, they resolv'd on a meanes to receive intelligence each from other. And in the evening *Metaneone* (being upon departure) would have presented *Perseno* with an exceeding rich diamond, which hee could never (either by forced courtesie or courteous force) worke him to accept: whereby (being no lesse satisfied with the noblenesse of his minde, than with his other gentle qualities) taking (in affectionate manner) his leave of him, hee transported himselfe to his Frigat that rode waiting for him, and departed.

Perseno, now a glad man, that the businesse had so succeeded according as hee desired it should, went, and acquainted there-
with

with the *Countesse*, who astonished at the boldnesse of his resolution, could not chuse but commend it, seeing it had so well succeeded. And being to render the King an account of their voiage and arrivall, they wrote so well in commendation of the *Prince*, touching the purpose of his freeing and accompanying them, that more could not be said thereof, giving him withall an inkling of having discovered in him, a more than ordinarie inclination to the fame and renowne of the *Princesse*. Afterwards *Perseno* taking counsell touching the fortifying of that place, and having noted how *Eromilia* lived not without feare, deferring the building of the House and Temple, setled himselfe to wall it round; and beginning at the foot of the rocke, fortified the parts adjoyning to the ascent, with small paines and lesse charge, the rocke it selfe supplying him with stone and lime.

A little before the peering out of the Sun, came *Metaneone* to his Galley, where the *Count* with much joy received him: to whom he related all that befell him, extolling *Eromilia* her singularities with such superlatives, as the *Count* could not chuse but tell him, smiling; Sobrietie (My Lord) with these your commendations, no more I beseech you. Two things I want for becomming enamored, and those are, the being young, and therewithall a *Prince*. If your Highnesse publish her to such as want neither of these, in such fashion as you doe to me, (no doubt) you will have rivals enow.

The *Prince* joying at the *Counts* words, could not satisfie himselfe in talking of her, resolving in any case to demand her. Neither could the *Count* therefore blame him, having beene long before informed (by lesse passionate witnesses) of the merits of that *Princesse*, advising him to go on in that match, not so much for the satisfaction of the *Prince*, as for the interesses of the kingdome of *Mauritania*. Considering then how they had in their voiage too much digressed, he (as soone as the *Prince* went to sleepe) caused to wigh up anchor and steere on a straight course for *Sardegna*.

There blew from shore-ward a sweet gale of wind, and the Vessell scoured away amaine, on each side courted with wanton Dolphins: when after having two dayes sailed with most prosperous weather, they were assailed by a tempest, so terrible, as the Masters-mate (with all his counsell) could not resolve of any course that could availle them, observing the winds so outragiously unstable, as when by the helpe of any one gale, they ranne a course towards any part, they were suddenly rebutted and driven backe by another: so as, not being able to obey any one particular, but forced to yeeld to the violence of all indifferently, they were constrained to come up and downe, with an order so disorderly, that dejected and suppressed both in courage and force, they had given themselves over for lost, had not the goodnesse of the Vessell and ghing somewhat consoled them.

The *Prince* no whit dismaied, in that he was assured of the soundnesse of his Galley, commanded to give her sea-roome enough, but seeing no meanes of disobeying the winds, they gave their violence

way, according to their alterations : so as, although they had desired to come a-shore, yet was there not any meanes to doe it, because the progresse of tenne miles was seconded with a greater regresse. By meanes whereof, not knowing where they were, they danced at the sound of the rustling waves, more than eight dayes in the Center of the sea, with the losse of many of their oares, shivered by the repercussion of the surging billowes. On the ninth day the tempest being somewhat appeased, they descried above them the Iland of *Maiorica*, and a Galley that set forth from *Cabrera*. Whereupon desirous to know whence they were, imagining her to be sent from the King of *Maiorica* to his daughter (by whose meanes he might write something to *Perseno*) he commanded to make towards her; but for all they could doe, it was impossible to overtake her, for she so posted with the helpe of both oares and sailes, that in the beginning of the night, she got quite out of their sight.

The *Prince* (suspecting in his heart I know not what) seeing that though the tempest was calmed, yet the wind was against him, turning towards the *Count*, said unto him, I cannot imagine why this Galley should shun me; I have a great desire to follow her, because I cannot possibly steere onwards any further in my intended course, which I shall neglect but for this onely night, during which time also, the Galley-slaves may repose themselves; seeing the wind will drive us whither I would goe. The *Earle*, seeing him so desirous, would not contradict him.

The saild all night with their prore towards *Lebecchio* (being the way they saw the Galley hold) when at the breake of day the *Centree* on the maine top-saile, told them he descried the Galley not above five miles off. The *Prince*, who lay on a quilt with his cloathes on, and his armes hard by him, presently rose up; and causing the Galley-slaves to be meated, and the Knights armed, he pursued her with sailes and oares: yet she (being one of the swiftest Galleyes of all that sea) had not beene so easily overtaken, if she had listd to flie away; but seeing her selfe traced after, she holding on her course as the wind carried her away, without putting hand to oare, seemed to stay and expect to be boarded. By this time they drew so neere her, that the Sunne (by then risen) discovered her fully; so that the *Prince* saw her with her rich lanthornes, in bignesse little lesse than his; well mann'd with souldiers, and numerous for galley-slaves; imagining therefore that she was no Pirat (as he had beleevd) he bade the oares forbear, and (with the advise of the *Count*) commanded *Tolmido* Captaine of his men, to take a Frigat, and goe see what she was; he (performing the command) quickly overtooke her, as she sailed gently, without making any haste. And demanding what she was? he was asked againe, who they were that would so faine know? Whereto *Tolmido* answering that they were of *Mauritania*; (just at that word) appeared a Knight of a low stature, and iron hue, at whose comming all the rest reverently retired themselves; whilst he fixing his eyes on *Tolmido*, said,

Sir

Sir Knight, I know not what you are, neither am I curious to know it; me thinkes you should be as little inquisitive of me. I can not imagine wherefore you have ever sithence yesterday so dog'd me to no purpose. I will not tell you what I am, though I be such, as can tell how to chastise your indiscretion, if you keepe not on your way. *Tolmido* (although by his garb and appearance, he ghesed him to be no ordinarie person, yet seeing him so stout) made answer.

Let it not displease you (Sir Knight) that I aske what you are, in that you might be such, that he, who sent me to you, might perhaps honour you, if you were thereof capable, or did deserve it. It is the ordinary fashion of such as goe by sea, to haile one another, and therefore you had no neede to be therewith offended: but sithence that you are so disdainfull and proud, as to dare (not knowing the termes of civilitie) thus boldly to threaten us, I am content to returne with this your answer, and doe beleve that you will be faine to shew, whether you can prove your selfe to be so brave and valiant in deeds, as you are rash and arrogant in words.

The Knight (not accustomed to such answers) taking a bow in hand, aimed at him an arrow, which if it had hit, where he levelled, dispatched had beene the life of *Tolmido*; but fortune so favoured him, as it slipping by him, razing onely his skinne, and doing him no other harme, pierced into the water. Whereupon, he retiring himselfe with his company (though shot at by the Galley) returned safely to the *Prince*: who (seeing what violence was offered) advanced forwards, causing to be hung out the standard of warre, understanding afterwards by *Tolmido* what termes were used, he could not imagine who that Knight might be, till at length he began to suspect it might be some Prince that went about to steale away *Eromina*, neither was he indeed therein any whit mistaken. This suspicion made him become more fierce and eager, so as having got the lee of her, he began to salute her with such a showre of arrowes, as obscured even the midday Sun: yet found he not her asleepe, nor her men with their hands tied at their girdle, for as soone as *Tolmido* was gon, she turn'd backe, and (mainely rowing) came on, to charge the *Prince*.

The battle of Archers lasted not long, because *Metaneone* (not waying a rush the furie of the shot-men) hastened to grapple with the Galley; and (having under him the best Vessell in the world, and the wind a-poope) encountred her with such a thump, as tearing off her snout, tottered and bruised her all-over: then armed with a halfe-pike (being backed by his Archers and seconded by his Knights; himselfe in person the first among the formost gotten up on her prore) made such a massacre of all such as opposed him, that in spite of them he boarded her, where followed by his owne men, hee justling and laying about him with sword in hand, won her to her mast, where encountered with a Squadron of chiefe Knights, hee was forc'd to retire himselfe some steps backwards. But resolved either to prevaile or die, he Tiger-like flung
I 3 himselfe

himselfe on the little Knight, who was Lord of the rest, and getting within his pikes point cut it off close at his hand, charging him with all with such and so many blowes as constrained him to fall downe at his feete on the hatches; whence *Telmido* taking him by the heeles drag'd him betweene two bancks, intending (if he had had time) to cast him over boord. Whilst the *Prince* obstinately pursuing the assault, got againe as farre forwards as the maine Mast, and thence further, but with such difficultie, as he was faine to win the Galley by inches: for besides the good ghing, there were aboard her betweene Knights and souldiers, about two hundred, who behaved themselves very valiantly: of all which neverthelesse there remained but sixtie alive, & those for the most part wounded. The *Prince* lost some twentie of his, beside some of the ghing that were hurt with the arrowes, and more had been kild and wounded, but that the battlements defended them. Then would the *Prince* forthwith know of the prisoners, what they were? and who was their Lord? Whereto they made answer, that they were *Catalans*, and that the Knight by him hurt, and perhaps slaine, was *Don Peplafes Prince of Catalogna*, who (enamoured of the *Princesse* of *Maiorica*; and understanding that by her good will shee would not consent to any mariage at all,) went to *Afrique* to steale her away, which he resolved to effect; without his owne fathers consent, and therefore unknowne to him, set forth privily from *Barcellona*.

Metaneone (rejoycing for so good an encounter, and that fortune, by such unthought of meanes had so favoured his desires) blessed the tempest that drave him thither, joying in himselfe, that it was his good fortune (by the instigation of an unknowne desire to cut off and frustrate the designs of the *Prince*, which had they beene effected, had made him the unhappiest man in the world.

In the meane time lay *Peplafes* more than halfe dead betweene two of the ghing-bancks, when *Metaneone* (causing him to be tane up, and his wounds search't and drest) sent the *Count* to visit him, and to tell him that he was sorrie for his hurt, but much more, because he himselfe was the occasioner thereof; for had they but knowne one another, then that inconvenience had not hapned: whereas his concealing of himselfe might have occasioned a greater disaster. But he, (more vexed at heart for the frustrating his designs than for his wounds) having understood who his enemy was, dissembling his anger, answered, That he was not agrieved at his hurts got by the hands of so valorous a *Prince*, but rather thought him well imploied, in that they gave him occasion of being acquainted with him: in respect therefore that there was not between them any cause of enmity, he desired to be permitted to hold on his way, seeing that if the inconvenience was occasioned by his ignorance, he well felt the smart thereof.

The *Count* having related this his suit unto the *Prince* (who then was upon going himselfe to visite him) gave him thereby cause to alter his minde, so as he went not, but sent againe the *Count*, with order

order to tell him; That he was sorry he could not serve him in that particular; understanding how he was bound for *Afrique* to steale away the *Princesse* of *Maiorica*, an offence that extended it selfe to the King of *Catalogna* his father, the King of *Maiorica*, and to all other Princes; but more particularly to all Knights, expressly obliged to defend that sex. And that therefore he might doe well to see carefully to the cure of his wounds, assuring himselfe he should not be detained prisoner, being there was a good and reciprocall amitie betwixt both their fathers: but that the reason why he could not let him part suddenly was, because he could not be accessory to his offence, which otherwise hee must needs have beene, if knowing his intention, and being able to prevent it, he did it not: Nay, that he further knew himselfe tied as he was a *Prince* to remedy it, and as he was a Knight to chastise him, if he offered to put his plot in execution; but that he hoped that the qualities of his birth and dignity, (with the obligations accompanying them) had already therefrom sufficiently dissuaded him.

Don Peplasos stood a good while after he had heard this embassage, without speaking any thing, till at length he burst forth into such speeches; The *Prince* of *Mauritania* favours me exceedingly in redoubling the paines of a person of your merit, thereby re-obliging me with the favour of his visits: But as concerning my voyage, which (as you tell me from him) was to steale away the *Princesse* of *Maiorica*, I pray you assure him that whosoever told him so, lied most fallably, in that he informed him of an untruth in a matter so far from my thoughts, as that *Princesse* (whom I never yet saw) is from my knowledge and acquaintancc. And if my voyage hath given occasion to any ill-minded fellowes to thinke so of me, yet cannot any such conjecture accuse me, neither am I such as ought to yeeld any man an account where, or which way I goe, there being in those parts whither I am bound for, so many countries and such diversitie of occasions wherein a Knight may honourably imploy himselfe: As I hold my selfe greatly injured of such as judge of me rather the worst than the best; for the rest, I know the *Prince* for a valiant Knight, and have tri'd him, but yet armes (as well as other things) have their both fortunate and fatall dayes, so as if I should happen to affront him; this my present misfortune should no whit discourage me; Albeit for the occasion he pretends, there shall neither be cause for him to chastise me (as he saith,) nor for me to defend my selfe, as I would doe for any one, that would offer to injure me. If he please to leave me to my liberty, there being not betweene us any cause of hostility, he will then performe what he owes to the amitie of our parents. If otherwise, and that he will rather credit the malignant conjectures of some villaine, than the royall words of a *Prince*, I shall then have just cause to thinke my selfe hardly used by him.

The *Count* could doe no lesse than reporte all these speeches punctually to the *Prince*, who (not as much as moved thereat) sent for

for the *Catalans*, of whom hee would know againe, whither *Don Peplafos* intended to goe; those that had already vnadvisedly spoken the truth, could not revoke what they had said; the rest (who were so fortunate as not to be examined) said, they knew not their Lords intrinsecall intentions. Howbeit the rumor thereof was so published, as the more cautelous sort, knew better how to conceale, than denie it. Whereupon *Metaneone* (unwilling by contestation to multiply the ruine of these men) resolved (with the advice of the *Count*) not to set him at liberty, untill such time as *Eromilia* were thereof advised, and had taken a course for the securing of her person. But having discouried of the manner of effecting it, they (considering of their being but sixtie miles wide from *Maiorica*) concluded to passe that way, and thercof to advertize the King her father, and so with the merit of two so great services to give him then an inckling of the desire he had to be his Sonne in-law; not that he then meant to treat of the marriage, but onely to prevent the suit of all such others, as might come thither to demand her.

The *Prince* (glad of this counsell) fell off with a contrary wind to *Fermentera*, where he found a Frigate, that there rode sequestred by the winds; The Knight that came in her, presently knowing the Galley Royall, ran with much joy to kisse the *Prince* his hands, who suddenly knew him for one of *Eromilia's* Knights; of whom when he understood of his being sent from her, with letters to the King her father, he told him what had hapned betweene him and the *Prince* of *Catalogna*, and how that hee continued not in his voyage, because it was necessarie for him to goe to *Maiorica* there to leave him in the Kings custodie, till such time as the *Princesse* had made sufficient provision for the securitie of her person.

Fidele (for such was this Knights name) was much astonished at this newes, and besought the *Prince* to grant him some odds of time, to get him gon before him, as soone as the wind should turne to be a little calmer, that the King by reading the letters of the *Princesse*, might come to know the other obligation he ow'd him. To which request the *Prince* was at first loth to consent, supposing it was but to give the King of *Maiorica* time to receive him with greater pompe and honour; till afterwards considering the advantage he might come to receive by meanes of the letters of *Perseno*, and the *Countesse Palomera*, he was contented to favour his request: and such was the lucke that the winde in that instant (as it were) quite asswaged occasioned a great calme. Wherof *Fidele* regardlesse (having a good Frigate well provided of oares, and pressing forwards amaine speed) arrived at *Maiorica* a day sooner than the *Prince*.

The King (who was even dead of longing to heare newes from his daughter) seeing this Knight present himselfe before him, was exceeding glad thereof, and understanding what had hapned them in their journey as they went, and unto the *Prince* of *Mauritania* as he came) remained thereat strangely amazed, afterwards opening his daughters letter, he found it thus said,

My

My Lord, if I had beene capable of content, I might say I had received it from your Majesties letters, delivered me by the *Countesse of Palomero*, being the greatest joy that an obliged and obedient daughter might possibly receive; yet doth not this incapacitie deprive me of that comfort, which nature in all children, and your particular love towards me might suggest or put me in mind of: Insomuch therefore as you strive to surpasse all fathers in loving your daughter, most ungratefull were I, if I endeavoured not to exceed all other daughters, in loving so worthy and deserving a father. But now methinkes I heare you say, that the last effects manifested the contrary: yet (My Lord) I beseech you (in this subject) to give credit even to the incredible, for my affection, which was the source of *paradoxes*, was so repugnant to all humane dispositions, as it is no wonder, if with it subsist contrarieties. Behold then, how I pretend not to excuse my fault, but doe beseech you to impute it to passion: by whose meanes (like a raving sicke woman come to the worst point) I wanted force to exercise those faculties which the wise make use of; so as my offence deserves rather compassion than reproofe, in that it brings with it its owne punishment. And now that I have acknowledged my duty towards you, together with the fault of my abience; give me leave (I pray you) to defend my selfe with the worthy occasion of my errors. Represent, Oh represent before you (My Lord) a *Perosilo*, a *Prince* of such exceeding rare qualities, to whom was dedicated by you, my person, and by me, my soule; and then represent him before you dead. Alas, how could I possibly in so great disorder, observe any order? I, that more than any other loved him, whom all loved, (and which is more) with a true and legitimate love: If then he were assigned me by you, to be the companion of my life, why will you not permit me to be the companion of his death? And where shall I ever finde out his like? Indeede had I aim'd at no other end than solitarinesse, I could have retired my selfe into solitarie places, there at home: But what kinde of a solitarie life had that beene, where every one would have baited and opposed me? Besides, how had I beene able to resist authoritie? but much more your sweete perswasions wherewith you are able to divert the most constant resolutions? Now whereas you afterwards accuse me of small love; certainly (My Lord) if you thinke you have occasion to say so, I hope you have no reason to beleeve so; for it is right all one, as if you accused me for a dead woman, and respectlesse of your griefe, and of my mothers love, together with the debt I owe your subjects, and doe you beleeve that it would grieve me lesse to abandon these respects, than it would doe to lose my life? No surely, but the violence and wrong done me by such a conjecture, is at least as great (if not greater) than death it selfe; seeing it is true that love and death are both of equall power.

I answer not to all the residue of your grave and prudent reasons, which although they convict mee not, because they are

grounded upon common suppositions, which in my case (void of all rule) give no rule at all ; neverthelesse the reverence I owe you obligeth mee to receive them, as if they had already convinced mee. My loving family I will love, and among them the *Countesse* above all: little thought they once to see mee in the estate of a *Mistresse*, but of a slave for companie with them. It pleased God that the *Prince* of *Mauritania* freed, and conducted them here in safetie, as shall bee told you more at large by *Fidele*, the bearer hereof, whereto I referre my selfe ; beseeching you that (in respect I could not thanke that *Prince* by word of mouth) you would be pleased to supply my defect, by sending to the King of *Mauritania* his father, and to him such personages, as are capable of executing such an embassage. Touching the particular of my person, I know the danger wherein I am, and will fortifie my selfe in such a manner, as I may be able (the place being strong of its owne situation) onely with my owne family to defend my selfe, and live secure from all the world, so I bee but furnished with victuals. And in the meane time God will provide for all, whom I pray to grant your Majestie the height of felicity, and to me that comfort, which being absent from your Majestie I cannot receive.

Eromilia.

With this letter the King became somewhat consoled, in that hee thought he had wrought something on his daughters melancholy : Albeit she therein made no mention of returning home-wards ; neverthelesse he could not chuse but be well satisfied with the accidents that had hapned, hoping they would prove a meanes to induce her to alter her intention. But when afterwards he had seene the letters of the *Countesse*, and *Perseno* : he thought then that the Gods had sent them that *Prince* to free them from affliction. Therefore (having given order to receive him with all honour, and that notice should be given him, when he were descried in the sight of the Iland) he went the day following himselfe in person to meete him on the sea-coast. The honors wherewith he entertained him were such, as might be expected, from an inferior, and the love such, as could bee hoped for from a loving father. The *Queene* (who both by the relation of *Fidele*, and also by her owne letters comprehended the *Prince* his merits) received him with such tendernes of affection, as a mother is wont to welcome her endeared Sonne.

After reciprocall complements, the *Prince* retiring himselfe aside with the King, told him, that the cause of his comming thither was an accident, that chanc'd him with the *Prince* of *Catalogna*, whose servants had plainly confessed that they went with an intent to steale away the *Princesse Eromilia*, because their *Prince* had no hope of obtaining her by any other meanes. That it seemed not good unto him to take him along with him, lest he might thinke himselfe detained prisoner ; much-lesse would he by any meanes set him at liberty, lest he should then effect his designs :

designe: And that being now wounded, his Majestie (under the colour of hospitality) might detaine him, and in the meane time advertize thereof the King of *Catalogna* his father, and send the *Princesse* provision to assure her from such like dangers.

The King not knowing how to finde out words correspondent to the qualitie of his beholdingnesse, omitted no meanes of letting him see, how dearly hee esteemed such notable and so worthy services.

And concerning *Don Peplafes*, told him, that a better course could not be thought of, whom he would detaine, and have a provident eye to the curing of, his wounds, till such time as he had effected all that the *Prince* had counselled him. And so passing from businesse to complements, and from complements againe to affectionate passions; the *Prince*, who according to the custome of lovers, had not all this while the boldnesse to open his mouth in his owne desire, (whereat the King marvelled, beleeving that the *Countesse* and *Perseno*, who had thereof written unto him so confidently, were altogether deceived) yet now (having lighted on so fit an opportunity) said unto him,

Your Majestie is together with the title and dignity of a King, endowed by the heavens with inclinations so Royall as they embolden me to supplicate your Majestie for one favour, since that you have beene so courteously pleased, as to command me to aske you any thing. The King all joyfull (taking him by the hand) made answer, that he could not doe him a greater favour, than to demand whatsoever hee desired, assuring him he would not denie him any thing comprehended within the limits of his power. The *Prince* then kneeling on one knee, (whence he would not be raised up, doe what the King could, untill hee had first expressed his desire) said unto him; The boone I then begge of your Majestie is, that your Majestie would vouchsafe to be pleased to accept me for a sonne, by giving mee (for wife) my Lady the *Princesse Eromilia*. Whereunto the King raising him on his feete answered,

Worthy *Prince*, your Highnesse obligeth me more in disobliging me, than I can ever deserve, much lesse requite. My daughter cannot bee bestowed on either a greater or worthier *Prince* than your selfe; and the demanding her, as a boone, in so gentle a manner as you have done, had beene a sufficient motive to have induced me to give her you, if nothing else had tied mee thereto. Therefore I tell you, that without asking either counsell or advice of any one, (bee it the *Queene* or *Councell*) as is usually done betweene *Princes* of our condition; I will, that shee bee yours for as much as concernes me. Whereat the *Prince* would have kneeled downe againe to kisse his hands, but the King (staying him up) spake on; I told you, for as much as lies in my power, because, for what is in the power of others, I must request two things of you,

the one is, that there may bee obtained thereto the consent of the King your father; and the other is, that therewithall be procured the good will of my daughter, for well you know in what kinde of resolution she lives in, as yet; howbeit I trust (God willing) by the meanes of your merits (seeing the authoritie of a father could not hitherto prevaile any thing with her, which I have not as yet made use of, but have reserved it for a fitter season) we shall in a small time obtaine our desire.

The *Prince* humbling himselfe againe replied, Sir, I would not have presumed to demand her on any other conditions than those you propose, and doe assure your Majestie that if I had not feared to have beene prevented by others, I had not thus have asked her of you, ere I had first wrought the King my father to demand her for me himselfe by his Ambassadors, which shall be done in its time fit, and when it shall please your Majestie to command it. And as touching my Lady the *Princesse*, I will comfort my selfe with this, that if she marry at all, then is she (by your Royall liberality) to be mine. Having afterwards acquainted the King with the occasion of his voyage, how hee was bound for *Sardegna* to fetch home his brother, they accorded, that the one with his daughter, and the other with his father should labour for the accomplishment of both their desires, which was to be concealed till such time as the *Princesse* could be perswaded to alter her resolution. Then came they forth amongst their attendants very pleasant and merry, which caused all to rejoyce, being the first time that a joyfull looke was seene in that Court, since the departure of the *Princesse*.

The *Prince of Catalogna* was in the meane time removed out of the Galley, and carried to the citie in a horse-litter; which though performed with much honour, seemed neverthelesse strange unto him, beleeving he should be there detained prisoner. And being now visited by them, after that the King had entertained him with some courteous speeches, *Metaneone* thus said unto him,

My Lord, I grieve more for your hurts than I have cause to excuse my selfe for having given them you; for if you had (when you knew that my Galley was of *Mauritania*) either used me friendly, and not threatened me, or but as much as in some sort pronounced (not the name of your person) but the place whence your Vessell was, then had I not felt the sorrow and displeasure I now feele, nor you suffered the prejudice and losse you have and now doe; for which if it might be remedied, I would endeavour to give you satisfaction, not for that any offence of mine thereto binds me, but because indeed such is the inclination of my nature. The reasons that perswaded me to bring you hither, were your wounds and the ill plight of your Galley, wherein (wanting so many of your folke) you could not have defended your selfe from any one that had listd to injure you. Howbeit if the importancie of my businesse could have permitted me, I my selfe would not have feared to have conducted you home to the King your father, whom I beleeve to be a

Prince

Prince so just, that understanding how things passed, he would have had no occasion to have wish'd me any harme; the like hope I of you also: There being then no place neerer your kingdome than this, nor any King more courteous and friendly to both our fathers, than its Sovereigne here present, I thought good to recommend you to his Majestie, to whom I have related the disaster of our encounter, which grieves him so, as he desires that you stirre not hence in any case, till you be fully cured. Whereupon the King (interrupting him) said, My Lord, *Prince Peplasos*, I neede not adde any thing to what my Lord, *Prince Metaneone*, hath spoken, neither will indeed your hurts admit tediousnesse: we are (you know) friends and neighbours; lay aside then all melancholy, albeit you are in a house where dwelt no mirth these many dayes; have but the patience to stay till you be cur'd, and you shall then goe whither soever it please you. And albeit I know you came from *Catalogna* unknowne to your father, yet pretend I not to correct you therefore, much lesse to judge betweene you both; onely I pray you give me leave to acquaint your Royall father of your being here, and the messenger I will send, shall not part till you please.

Don Peplasos (not hearing himselfe accused of his fault) with a merry countenance, answered; That he would willingly write to his father, thanking therewithall very kindly, the one, and the other, with words, in shew the most courteous that could be, reserving nevertheless inwardly an implacable hatred, rather to the vertue than person of *Metaneone*, who, having taken leave of him, was by the King entertained with all such honours and pastimes as the time permitted him.

The Queene acquainted by her husband of all passages, was exceedingly glad thereof, and by his directions, presented the *Prince* (at his going away) with a flat box all chased over with diamonds, wherein was inclosed *Eromilia's* picture; which the *Prince* well knowing, would therefore by all meanes needs kisse her hands. And thence (having embarked himselfe) with a prosperous gale of winde passed over to *Sardegna*.

The End of the Second Booke.

CAVALIER
GIO:FRANCESCO
BIONDI HIS
EROMENA

The Third Booke.



Entertained was the *Infante Polimero* by the *Marquesse of Chia*, without any excesse of extraordinarie courtesie (for so would he have it,) where having reposed and air'd themselves a while, they went thence to *Caleri*, causing the slave to be brought along with them well guarded; whom the King (joyfull that he had gotten him into his hands) commanded to be close shut up in a strong

prison, till the time of his sufferings and punishment, which was to be deferred untill the returne of the *Princesse Eromena*.
Polimero would have kissed the King hands, (who understanding that he came of purpose to serve him, and for that end, desired to be made a Knight) seemed to bee delighted with his forward spirit and gentle demeanour; and when hee asked who hee was, the *Marquesse* durst not discover him (so strictly was he tied by promise to conceale him) which notwithstanding the King denied him not the honour of Knighthood,

There waited then on his Majestie the *Marquesse of Bossa*, with some other of his Councell, all the rest accompanying the *Princesse*; which

which *Marquesse* of *Chia*, desirous to understand the state of businesse sithence his departure thence; that other of *Bossa* (at this his request) in the presence of *Polimero*, thus said,

After the *Prince's* misfortune (whereof I beleeve this noble Knight hath already beene fully informed) the *Princesse* marching out into the field, was advertized how that King *Epicamedo* was with a strong army passed over to *Cape Luogodori*, and that the *Prince* his murtherers, being united and siding with him, had (for his assistance) procured all that Countrey to revolt. Whereupon (imagining that her speedy comming thither might hinder that infection to spread abroad among the neighbours) she made forwards to those parts, & found that *Valentino* (a small Castle forsaken by the men thereof, for feare of not being of number sufficient to keepe it) was valiantly defended by the women that therein remained, against all the enemies united forces. Whereby she (very joyfull) divined, and seemed to fore-see, that she (a woman also) was fore-destined to defend that state; with which hope inspired, she encreased her army with all such as she met by the way, she assailed the enemy in the night-time unawares, making of them such havocke, as *Epicamedo* was constrained by retiring his forces to raise the siege from *Valentino*. Which Countrey for being extraordinarie hilly, afforded him the commodiousnes of retiring himselfe without any hazard, till (after he had gotten out of the mountaines) he was set upon afresh by the *Princesse*, hard by *Villapetres*, who did that day so renowned exploits, that those of *Camilla*, and of a number of other famous women, were nothing in comparison of hers. For she had three Coursers kild under her, and personally affronted *Epicamedo* in two severall encounters; at the first whereof she unhorst him; but resolving at the second, either to kill, or take him prisoner, hardly escaped the being kild her selfe; for being invironed with the Kings guard, her horse being slaine, she was like to have beene also her selfe by them either slaine or taken prisoner, had she not valiantly defended her selfe with the death of more than fiftene of them. Neither perhaps had all this freed her, had not a Squadron of women of *Valentino*, (who followed her as Voluntaries) rescuing her from the danger she was in, remounted her on horsebacke, maugre all those that fought against her; by whose example euery man behaved himselfe so valiantly, that the enemy (with his rancks altogether disordered) was faine shamefully to retire himselfe under *Villapetres*. *Epicamedo* remaining by the hand of the *Princesse*, wounded with two deepe cuts, whereof he was not as yet cured.

Having thus raised the siege of *Valentino*, chased away the besiegers, and withall beaten them in open field, she forced them to retire into the very *Villapetres*, and keepe themselves close therein, as if they had beene besieged.

In which meane time, those of the *Princesse* her councill of warre were diversly opinionated of what was best to be done; wherof some would have her pursue the enemy untill he were quite vanquished; others

others thought best, that (having blockt up *Epicamedo* from going on any further by the opposition of the valorous *Valintinean* women together with one part of the army) they should with the other part over-run the countrey on the left hand towards *Saffari*, where they understood the Admirall resided, who (ere he could be advertized of her comming and of the discomfiture of *Epicamedo*) might (together with the city) runne the hazard of being taken prisoner ; to this last advice the *Princesse* somewhat inclined, but was dissuaded by the nearenesse of the enemies Galleyes, doubting lest they landing their men, might breake those troopes she left behind her ; or else dividing their forces pursue them, and environ them in, betwixt the King and the Admirall. Whilst she stood thus doubtfull what course to resolve of, there arrived before her a Knight (to her full well knowne) who kneeling downe said,

Most excellent Lady, I come from the Fleete which as yet rides in the Port of *Torre*, where the horrible treason against the life of the *Prince* was published by the Traitors-selves, by whom the chiefe of that countrey (being cald for before them to *Saffari*, and earnestly wrought upon to joine in the Rebellion) seeing themselves in their power, could doe no lesse than promise them their service. But now being retired to the Fleete, and risen up in armes, have taken the Count of *Montevero* prisoner, who was then aboard the Royall, in the Admirals place, and because there is already a Galley sent to give his Majestie intelligence thereof along by the West coast ; I was also dispatched away in a Frigat, with commandement to coast hither along by the Easterne shore. But being by the tempest weather beaten into *Tolara*, I understood that your Highnesse was gon out with the army ; and therefore imagining that the Galley might by this time have performed that service without me : I came poast hither, to acquaint your Highnesse herewithall.

The *Princesse* hereupon (as soone as she read the letter, sent her by the Commanders of the fleete) determined to put their last consulted enterprize in execution, who (leaving in her campe five hundred horse, and five thousand foote,) about the first watch in the night, set her selfe with the rest of her forces on the way to *Saffari*. And this is the summe of all, that hath beene hitherto done. But we expect with great desire further newes, having already received a confirmation of what I have now told you, by the Galley that arrived here the other evening, who hath spent many dayes in comming hither, by reason of those past tempests, and was also chased by certaine Galleyes of *Corfica*, that lay at *Asinara*, who had already understood of the revolt of the fleete, who never lost sight of her, in all the storme, being winde-driven, or rather, weather-beaten into the same place not far distant one from another ; but as soon as the wind grew calme, the Galley (being well rigg'd and mann'd) with the favour of the night got quit out of their sight, and arrived here in safetie.

The *Marquesse* of *Chia* lovingly thanked him for this relation, and then taking *Polimero* aside, asked him, if his intent was to

part suddenly for the Campe, which having understood so to be, he replied, Mine (indeed) was once the same; but the conservation of our fleet gives me occasion to put in the place of Admirall, wherein (if once I but desire it) I cannot have any competitor. Therefore if you please, either to dispence with the obligation I have to serve you onely in this particular voyage; or else, to entertaine your selfe here, till such time as I have dispatched this businesse, which shall soone be (I being assured to be sent backe to the *Princesse*) I shall receive it as a speciall favour. The *Infante* (affectionately embracing him) answered, that his company would be at all times most acceptable unto him. Howbeit that, for so weighty an affaire, he went to deprive himselfe thereof, praying him not to neglect his businesse, which he would be exceeding glad to heare he had effected, there being not any necessitie of neglecting his affaires, for so short a journey. Having then taken instructions for the way, and licensed himselfe from the King, he set him forwards on his journey to *Sassari*, riding with as much content as could be, to see himselfe free from domesticke broiles.

Carasio, seeing his Lord addressed to a warre of every one so favoured, was very glad thereof; nor joyed it lesse *Polimero's* youth to survey a Countrey so differing from his, where in stead of parched sands, and barren downes, he feasted his eyes with the various aspect of most fertile hils, nature shewing her selfe so liberall, that being in other places sparing, she seemed here to be prodigall, which gave him occasion of discoursing with himselfe, that the pleasantnesse of *Poggio*, and others of his fathers seates, (compared with those he now saw) were but meere apparances, and besides but artificiall workes, requiring much toyle and paines in conserving them, whereas there were here to be seene the more than ordinary excellent workes of nature, which cloathed with sundry devises, shamed all artificiall colours, affording such content to the senses, as they were capable to receive by the fruition of those objects proportionable to their proportioned inclinations. And if this varietie seemed unto him so strange in a countrey so litle distant from his in latitude, what would he have thought of others far more fortunate and delightful? *Sardegna* being not of it selfe one of the best Provinces, though as then well enough inhabited, and sufficiently rich to sustaine its inhabitants, and withall to contribute corne to many other countries, which grew superabundantly in the Province of *Luogodori*.

Three dayes travelled *Polimero* without encountering any adventure; on the fourth he saw comming riding towards him from afar off, a Knight on a horse, dropping wet with sweate, and quite tired, which for all that could doe by spurring him, he could not make goe on one steppe further. Whereupon, knowing *Polimero* for a strange Knight (lifting vp his beaver) he said unto him,

Sir Knight, I beseech you favour me with your horse, for mine being tired can passe no further, yet must I make haste for the

the Kings service to whom I am sent from the *Princesse*.

Polimero hearing such an unreasonable demand proceede from a personage, of whom, by his rich armour, and by what his aspect promised, such a request was not to bee expected, made answer,

Sir Knight, if I knew, that you could not performe your duty with any other horse than mine, I would gladly give him you, to doe the King or *Princesse* any service, whom I also desire to serve as well as you; but knowing that you might have furnisht your selfe in place, through which you have passed; or if you could finde none there, that you may speede your selfe howsoever at *Cornetto*, I hope you will hold me excused, by so much the rather for that I going my selfe to serve the *Princesse*, should doe her but simple service, if I were deprived of my horse. But as the gods shall protect you, what good newes bring you with you? What hath she done at *Saffari*? Is that Traytor the Admirall perhaps taken? The Knight (altering his colour at these last words) answered him; The taking of the Admirall is not a thing so easie as you beleeve: casting with that word his eyes about, to see if any body was comming, and seeing none in sight, he spake on: The Admirall was never Traytor, but a Knight that can revenge injuries, as now he is ready to revenge this which thou dost him, and to take away as a good prize (together with thy life) that horse, thou wouldest not give him by courteous meanes; which said, he lightly vaulting off his saddle, drew out his sword.

Polimero taking him (by these words) for the Admirall, was the joyfullest man in the world, and giving *Carasio* his horse, drew out his sword, and said, Yea marry, this is the onely way to get the horse; if thou being the Admirall (as thy words descrie thee) hast the courage to kill me Knight-like, as thou slew'st the *Prince*, Traitor-like. Well, then, come doe thy worst, for I will doe my best, to revenge in his injurie, the wrong done to all *Princes*. The other replied not with words, but with a great blow which he made at his head, ere he was in his guard, or had time to bring thither his shield, which had put him in an ill plight, had it not happened to fall athwart, so as it lighting on the crest of his helme did him no other hurt, than the cutting off of a small piece thereof. To requite which courtesie, *Polimero*, having put him to ward a fain'd blow, stroake with a true one at his helme, with such force, as hitting him in a place unarmed, it there made an ample wound. The Knight (who desired nothing more than a quick dispatch of the combat, seeing himselfe thus disadvantaged in the very first blow) resolved with himselfe to adventure at all. For the effecting whereof, having spied out his opportunitie of closing, got in to imbrace him, throwing away his sword, that he might the better use his dagger; then hee struggling to throw him downe, tried his armour every where by potching it, to see if he could find any place unarmed. But *Polimero*, being fresher and stronger than the other, (lifting him up by the hams) threw him flat on his backe, and seazing on his dagger (whilst

he lay amazed with the fall) held its point before his helmets sight, bidding him yeeld; which because he would not doe, but struggled to get up, *Polimero* stabd him in a place unarmed under the short rib, laying him thereby to measure againe his length on the ground; and taking him for dead (because he saw him stirre no more) he unlaced his helmet, to assure himselfe thereof, when seeing him yet alive (though not in plight to defend himselfe) he said unto him,

Tell me (Sir Knight) in plaine termes, who you are? Because, if you be the Admiral, and had as well avenged the death of the *Prince*, as you have done mine, you had not beene in the plight you now are in, which had beene much better for you; for the longer the gods delay punishment, the heavier inflict they them, as now they doe to you, by not suffering you to die by my hands. Which as hee was speaking, hee saw comming towards him a great crew of Countrey Pefants, armed with pikes and javelings, who seeing the wounded Knight on the ground without any helmet, straightwayes knew him; and not knowing *Polimero* otherwise than for a stranger. Alas, My Lord, (said they) what meane you to doe with this wretch, which you keepe under you little better than dead? How much better befits it him to die by other meanes, seeing your hands are too worthy for him, and he farre unworthy to die by them. For he is (if you know him not) the *Prince* his murtherer, the Author of the Rebellion, the occasioner of the warre, and wee pray God he prove not consequently the cause of our utter ruine.

Polimero glad of such an encounter, said unto them, My friends, if you will promise me to bring him prisoner to the *Princesse*, I will leave him in your hands. How? (answered they) If you please to deliver him us, we will most willingly obey you, not onely for our promise sake, but also because it is an imploiment we much desire; for (we pray you) be pleased to know, that this is the Admirall, the common enemy, both of the Kingdome and of all good men; howbeit for your better assurance, if you list to returne backe but two miles, we will deliver him up (in your presence) to the Magistrate of *Cornetto*. That will I not doe (answered *Polimero*) you seeme to me to be such, as I neede not doubt of your honesty, see therefore, I leave him in your hands, take him, for I give him you: which said, hee mounted on horsebacke, leaving him as yet in a swoond on the ground. But they having laid him athwart his horse, without bearing him any kind of respect, lead him to *Cornetto*, and delivered him up to the Magistrates charge, who caused his wounds (whether hee would or no) to be search'd and carefully look'd unto.

Polimero (joyfull for what had hapned, and continuing his journey) understood by the way how that the *Princesse* surprizing *Sassari* at unawares, had taken prisoner the Baron of *Frisano*, but that the Admirall escaped away; and that her Highnesse was withall speede returned under *Villapetres*, ere the King of *Corfica* could be informed

med of her absence thence. This newes made him (leaving *Saffari* on the left hand) hold right on to *Villapetres*, whence come to *Valentino*, he understood how the *Princesse* was already arrived at the Campe; wherefore he thinking every houre one yeare till his comming to see her, having refreshed his horses, past on, and came to the Campe, just at such time as *Epicamedo's* men had begun a brave skirmish; which growing greater and greater, increased almost to the magnitude and forme of a battell. The *Princesse* stood beholding it (from the top of a hillocke) encompassed with the principall of the army; when looking aside, by chance, shee spied *Polimero* descending the side of a hill, in great haste, for the great desire he had to make one in the battell. It seemed to her that she never saw Knight of a better grace and seemeliness (except her Brother *Perosilo*) and not being able to refraine looking on him, she perceived that he had a desire to fight: but he (come to the place, and seeing the enimie at first but weake in number) stood still to behold the skirmish, which by degrees increasing, began to exasperate. The *Princesse* would not suffer hers to be succored, for the great desire she had to see what this unknowne Knight meant to doe; when he (seeing issue forth of the enemies Campe a troope of horse, that came to charge the *Princesse* her squadron in the flanke, and perceiving no man stirre from her side) put on *Flammauro* with such velocity, as the winde could not have surpassed him in swiftnesse: and then (without regard of being all alone, but preferring the necessitie of aide before the difficultie of the enterprize) himselfe alone resolutely charged them all. The *Corse* Captaine (desirous to breake his lance in the curace rather of a Knight than of a meane pike-man) ranne with his lance rested fully at him; so as in the midst of the carriere each of them hit his opposite, but with contrarie successe; for the *Cors* burst his lance (as he made account to doe) without doing any further harme, and *Polimero* in the encounter brake his also, but left a yard and a halfe thereof in his enemies breast. Then reining his obedient Courser to the right hand to divert himselfe from encountering the whole troope together, he mannaged him so dexterously, as (having broke through them without receiving any blow) he turned face againe with sword in hand, sooner than they could doe the like; and withall (ere any one touch'd him) sent with three blowes, three horsemen tumbling to the ground. In the meane time, though all stricke at him, yet was there not any that could fully reach him, by reason of the great fiercenesse of *Flammauro*, who (as if he had beene inspired with a reasonable soule) would not suffer any one come neere him; yet would he come so neere to the others, as his master might well come to strike them: never in her life-time ever eyed the *Princesse* a more pleasing spectacle, considering the valours of the Knight and Courser, so fitly shared betweene them, as by assisting one the other reciprocally, they became Invincible. Well knew she him to be a stranger, in that all her Knights were well knowne unto her, imagining hee could be no lesse than a *Prince* that enjoyed so rich

a treasure, as so unvaluable a Courser. *Polimero* seeing no man assault him (after he had kild and beaten downe above twenty horsemen) with redoubled courage, began to charge them a-new, but finding no armour that either denied entrance to the fine edge of his damaske blade, or resisted the force of his victorious arme, nor any Courser that in nimble gyres, and curvets, could match his *Flammauro*, he forced them to save themselves by flight; himselfe breaking in suddenly with the same furie among the foote squadrons, where those of his side following him, would have slaine them all, had there not beene sent fresh troopes to their reliefe. Who shooting a good while whole clouds of arrowes, gave *Polimero* cause to feare lest his horse (which then by the triall he had of him, he esteemed more than all the kingdomes of the world) might be thereby endangered; and therefore retired himselfe from such a hazard. But the firy Steede though obedient to the hand, by his neighing, puffing, snorting and looking backwards, expressed how unwillingly he retired, which he manifested so evidently as the *Princesse* had thereby occasion to say, that he needed not speech in that he expressed himselfe better by his actions.

Polimero seeing him so willing, and knowing him to be so barded and trapped as he could not be hurt elsewhere than in the legs, resolved to adventure him, not without entring into the opinion of such, as beleeve the transmigration of spirits into bodies, his *Flammauro* seeming to him to possesse the spirit of a *Hector* or an *Achilles*. But it so fortun'd, that having emptied their quivers, they so closed in the shooke, as they had scarce roome to use their swords.

The *Princesse* continued heart-ravished (as it were) with this her gust, Spectatrix of the sweetest sport that ere her eyes beheld; neither could she tell (till she saw *Polimero's* helme off) whether she more affected the horse, or the horseman, being so rapt with the pleasure she conceived, as she tooke no notice how hers were disadvantaged. Whereupon the *Marquesse* of *Oristagno* could not chuse but say unto her;

May it please your Highnesse to give me leave to succour our men, lest that noble Knight judge us to be farre more cowardly, than we have esteemed him valiant; whereof the *Princesse* was well content, but would not for all this stirre thence her selfe. The *Marquesse* then followed with a noble troope of Knights (being himselfe most nobly descended from the bloud Royall, and withall the richest of the *Sardegnan* Lords) issued forth at such time, as *Polimero* (after he had a little reposed himselfe) was about to goe to renew the charge. Who seeing comming towards him the *Marquesse*, richly armed, and not knowing who he was, he staid for him, till such time as come to him, he said,

Sir Knight, I beseech you pardon us, for having left you alone, seeing your matchlesse valour needs no succour; and truly, but that we doubted you would have thought us discourteous, we had permitted you alone to undergoe the brunt of destroying *Epicamido's* whole

whole campe, we are now come hither by her Highnesse Commiſſion to obey and follow your armes and command. *Polimero* (inclining himſelfe ſomewhat downewards) made answer;

Sir Knight, if my actions were ſuch as might deſerve the commendations you give me, I ſhould deeme my ſelfe exceeding fortunate; but the little time that makes me know you ſo courteous, makes me know alſo how little reaſon I have to beleeeve my ſelfe valorous, and yet that little in that reſpect alone, that I am favoured with your applauſe. As touching my not being ſuccored, I have reaſon to beleeeve, that I needed not any, becauſe of the juſtice of the Lady *Princeſſe*; neither could I (without being much to blame) entertaine ſo unworthy an opinion of ſuch worthy Knights as ye are; nor is it indeed poſſible that any one fighting for ſuch a cauſe as this, can chuſe but be couragious if not valorous: and for the reſt, I am come hither with an intention to ſerve; if therefore you be to fight, behold me ready to obey and follow you.

The *Marqueſſe* (who was one of the moſt courteous of his time) had not left *Polimero's* answer unreplied unto, had he not beene prevented by the enemy, who perceiving theſe Knights deſcend the hill, had formed a ſquadron of the beſt of the hoſt, to goe encounter them, which the *Marqueſſe* ſeeing now come galloping towards him (with their launces reſted) ſaid to *Polimero*; The Lady *Princeſſe* is that onely one that can paralell your courteſies, ſee where comes the enemy, let us goe meete them; at which words, he (ſpurring his horſe) paſſed on. But *Flammauro* at the onely checke of the hand (as if he had knowne his Maſters will) ſprung forwards ſuch a leape as he left behind him the *Marqueſſe*. *Polimero* had no launce, for he had broken it in the firſt encounter, ſo as being encountred by many, he bore the brunt of them all, without moving ever ſo little of his ſeate, yet ſtroke he downe at every blow a horſeman to the ground, being aſſured if he fail'd any, his horſe ſupplied his default, who beate downe ſo faſt as even his owne friends feared to approach him.

Epicamedo, who began by this time to recover, and had left his bed, being deſirous to ſee what was done abroad, cauſed himſelfe to be carried up on a hill, accompanied with divers Lords, among whom were the Earles of *Reparata*, *Puſſinera*, and *Caſtle Rabone*, with the Barons of *Ianque* and *Lagoſardo* all the *Prince* his murderers, ſeeing now ſo rich a ſquadron on the enemies ſide, would needs know who they were, wherein he was ſatiſfied by theſe Lords, who well knew them by their devices. But as they knew not *Polimero*, ſo were they aſtoniſhed at his valour. By this time had the horſe (iſſued from their ſide) received the charge, after the toothe were cut all to pieces. *Epicamedo*, not able to ſupport this ſo foule a diſgrace, (all ſwollen with diſdaine) called for his armes. The Chirurgions were not able to diſſwade him, who although he was by reaſon of his wounds growne weake, yet was he farre more ſtout than feeble, and becauſe hee could not ſuffer his head (not as yet well cured) to be
armed,

armed, therefore would he needs goe bare-headed. But those great ones that were about him, in the end so prevail'd with him, as (calling for their horses) they quieted him with assured hope, that they would by the getting of that dayes victory recover the honour of the field.

The *Marquesse of Oristagno* (seeing the enemies foot overthrowne, and their horse but few, and these retiring) drew neere *Polimero* to conduct him to the *Princesse*, judging the residue sufficient to make good the field; but now perceiving issue from their side more than twenty troopes of horse, he said: I once thought that the enemy had contented himselfe with the losse he hath already sustained, but hee (I perceive) is insatiable and will have more, let us see what troopes are these: looking then towards the *Princesse*, he perceived she sent him succour; and comming afterwards to know (among the enemies) the *Count of Reparata* and the other Rebels, he shewed them *Polimero*, but more particularly those that slue the *Prince*.

The *Princesse* (seeing the conflict grow greater and greater) mounted on horsebacke, and causing the Trumpets to sound, so rowled up *Epicamedo's* spirits, that she saw him send forth for a supply well neere all his horse. Whereupon shee doing the like, and drawing nigh the battell, came to know all the Traitors, of whom being desirous to take some alive, she discovered her desire to the warlike *Valentinian* women, who alwayes made good their places in the flankes of her own troope, and then put her selfe forwards among foremost, where *Polimero* was, that with one blow had newly beaten off his horse the *Count of Castlerabone*: the women alighting strave to carrie him away, which they could hardly effect, because of the great resistance of the enemies side. The *Princesse* (growne furious to see them all before her) thrust at the *Baron of Ianque*, which fortune so well guided, that it passing betweene his curace and pouldrons came out at his backe. *Polimero* who by the colours of *Sardigna*, by her rich upper garment, by her horse roially trapped, (but above all) by the comelineffe of her person, knew her for the *Princesse*; and observing her strive to get this prisoner, put forwards *Flammauro*, who by making a large roome, gave the women time to save their prize; and then changing his sword into the other hand, he compassed with his right arme the *Baron of Ianque* about the middle, and spurring on his owne horse, plucked the other sheere off his, which he performed with such facility, as one would have thereby judged his force to have beene sufficient to have removed a Tower, and delivering him over to the charge of the *Valentinian* women (whose designe he well observed) he encountred the *Count of Reparata*: whilst the *Princesse* (in the same place) affronted that other of *Pussinera*. But in respect all their *Cavallerie* ran thither to succour them, the throng grew to be so pressing as neither the one part nor the other had beene able to stirre, if *Flammauro* had not made them roome, for he keeping off with his heeles such as were behinde him, gave *Reparata's* horse such a shock, as made him (being not able to stand) presse downe with him

him (as he fell) that of *Puſſinera*, who tumbled downe in a bundle with him, with the legges of the one *Count* and the other under their horſes.

And becauſe *Flammanro* was that onely he, that could make all ſtand off, *Polimero*, leaving to others the charge of bearing away the priſoners, tooke care to ſecure thoſe, that bare them away from being hindred by ſuch as would have reſcued them; wherein he had no ſmall adoe, by reaſon they were all upon him, ſo as he had not got from them alive, but that the *Princeſſe* reſcued him, who ſeeing him *barricaded* about with the enemies horſe (none of them daring for all that approach him) being ſeconded by the *Marqueſſe*, and the *Valentinians* with an unreſiſtable force, brake into their ring, by that meanes freeing him from the danger he was in, without having the power, either to ſpeake one word unto him (although ſhe was alwayes cloſe by him) or to ſeparate her ſelfe from him, though ſhe knew no reaſon therefore. Wherehence I gather (concede me I pray you this ſmall digreſſion) that among the hidden ſecrets of nature, that of ſympathizing is one of the trueſt, which if we judge vaine in reſpect of the operator, may yet prove to bee not altogether ſuch in reſpect of the principles of nature. For as experience teacheth us, that the influence of lights and planets are true in the mutations of qualities here below, which none can denie, that denie not ſenſe it ſelfe; ſo may we alſo argue from the like, that the other ſtarres have alſo their peculiar influence, which if it be granted, and that wee allow them to bee promoters of affections, then muſt they bee ſuch alſo of love and hatred, by reaſon of the diuerſe proportion of their aſpects, and not of elections or caſuall accidents; and if they, or theſe, bee changed from their former into a diuerſe proportion, and that the celeftiall ſignes be found to bee of diuerſe aſpects, and that ſome of them be malignant, others not; ſome predominant, and others obedient; this may proceede from the foundation of daily conjectures, whereby wee ſee one friend rule another, the ſonnes the fathers, and the ſervants alſo overſway and (in a certaine manner) domineere over their Maſters.

So now *Polimero*, before ere hee ſaw the *Princeſſe*, became enamored of her; and ſhe (likewise without ſeeing him) fell ſo ſtrangely in love with him, that the more willingly ſhe ey'd and followed him, the leſſe power had ſhee to ſpeake to him; Nay, (almoſt deprived of all boldneſſe and courage) ſhe feared either to looke in his face or fall in conference with him.

He in the meane time ſcoured over all the field edg'd onwards by his great ſpirit, and by the deſire hee had to ſhew himſelfe worthy of the favour of her whom hee had elected for his Lady and Miſtreſſe, ſtand long ſtill to looke on her hee could not, as well for a native reſpect potent in that age of his, in teaching him that neceſſarie circumspection which might give others no occaſion to take notice of his thoughts; as alſo be-

M

cauſe

cause it behoved him to have an eye both to himselfe, and to his horse, who delighting in the warre, gave sometimes such counter-times, as might teach a good Horseman to sticke firme to his seate: yet failed he not to cast a carefull eye to her dangers, wherein he (abandoning all other care) rescued her twise from being oppressed with the enemies.

Of all the *Prince* his murtherers, there remained free, none but the *Baron of Lagosardo*: who albeit he were fierce and couragious, yet fought he neverthelesse very circumspective of his person, not that he feared to die, but because he feared to fall alive into the hands of the *Princesse*. Him *Polimero* knew not for one of them (though he had beene shewed him as well as the other foure) yet incountring him by chance, hee stricke him on the nape of the necke with a backe blow, which made him bow downe his forehead to his horse-necke; which he (come to himselfe) requited with a thrust in the flank, whence began to gush forth store of bloud, which the *Princesse* perceiving (and desirous to revenge) violently flew at him with such a furie, that (maugre those that would have guarded him, or her owne determination of having him alive) she never left him till such time as shee saw him mortally wounded, fallen downe and trampled, not weighing a rush all the rest; especially because *Polimero*, though he had no finger in her combat as long as it lasted, guarded neverthelesse her person in beating the way round about her with his *Flammauro*; by which meanes he defended her from all such as would have stricken at her.

By this time the enemies could doe no more, nor hold out any longer, having lost almost all their Captaines, so as there remained no other eminent Commander than the King alone; for the remnant of the Rebels (being the *Earles of Sarda, Terra nova, and Longeria*) were run away for feare of being taken prisoners: So that if either the day had lasted, or *Polimero* not beene wounded, then even there had ended the warre, and perhaps the life of *Epicamedo*. But *Eromena* doubting lest his wound were mortall (in that she saw gush out thereof such store of bloud) caused a retraite to be sounded, and then suspition chasing away respectivenesse, she having lifted up her beaver, said unto him;

Sir Knight, so great is the obligation I owe you, that it grieves me, my power is inferior to the desire I have to expresse my gratefulnesse: I see you bloody, but know not how you feele your selfe: Doe you beleeeve that your wound is very deepe?

Polimero, as soone as he saw her face uncovered, permitted his greedy eyes to runne to such a long'd for sight, thinking hee saw the heavens opened, and those parts, which with celestiall symmetry formed that face, to be congregated gods; howbeit he was dubious in the absolute distinction of the greater from the lesser, seeing all generally Majesticall, and every one by it selfe worthy of the service of so many more worlds. But those splendent eies (full of sparkling rayes, that pierced through the concentred point of his heart) made

made him a little stagger, whose lustre was as that of *Apello*, but their vertue as of a greater Deity; for these in stead of dazeling the material eyes, strike those of the minde with so reiterated raies, that there is no lightsome splendor, either of Sunne, Moone or Stars, which contains the thousandth part of its own vertue so fully in it selfe, as these possesse all of all theirs, in a manner so unexpressable, as the most perspicuous wit could never forme to it selfe an *Idea* conformable thereunto: And although her language had its preheminance, and that it had captivated the understanding in its first apprehension; neverthelesse the *shafts* of her eyes made themselves be esteemed the armes of *Iove*, nay his throne, nay his heaven, nay *Iove* himselfe. Wherefore having already lifted up his beaver, with an humble garbe and true posture of veneration he returned her this answer;

And who can ever presume (valorous Lady) to thinke himselfe worthy or capable of serving you in such a manner, as that your deserts, and the dutie of who so serves you, excede not a thousand times his service? or what greater recompence ought any one pretend from your Highnesse, for any service than your service it selfe? such have the gods made you, that being onely and absolutely singular in all excellent parts, you onely should, for being such, be excluded and exempted from the debt which others owe by the common law of nature. As for me I pretend nothing else than your service, neither expect I other guerdon than that you would vouchsafe to be pleased to give me leave to serve you: wherein if my fortune or your benig- nitie make me so happie, as that my service be acceptable unto you; I shall account in at unpretended gaine. But as for my wound, I thinke it be not dangerous, if my sense beguile me not, which indeed it well may, seeing that who so lives with the gods is not subject to the feeling of any paine; your divine presence is sufficient to ease all kinde of paines, and cure all manner of wounds, though deepe and inward, as I repute mine to be at this instant rather exasperated than given.

The *Princesse*, in the lifting up he made of his beaver, rested so extazied, as if she had beene stricken with lightning, beleiving not till such time as she heard him speake, that hee could be other than a damzell like her selfe, whom some emulation had drawne into those parts. But having afterwards examined the arguments for the contrary, she could not satiate her selfe in beholding him, yet not all of him, for her eyes (become immoveable) had not the power to stirre from their first object; so as fixed altogether on his, her eyes twinkled not at all, and so exceedingly was she ravished by an unknowne power, as she was forced to understand the invisi- ble intelligences that passed frō one heart to the other. But when she afterwards heard his courteous conceits, his modest pretentions, and his last words, of her not understood amisse; she being such a one, as both for vivacitie of wit to conceive them, and for incomparable beauties and exquisite perfections, to deserve them was every way peerelesse, imagining withall that so lofty a thought could not be

lodg'd elsewhere, than in a *Prince's* heart) she with a glad some countenance made him this reply.

You are too too curious (Sir Knight) in prizing a feeble damzell so highly as you doe; and too little affectioned to your selfe-wards, in so slenderly esteeming your owne worth; for such have your services hitherunto beene, as I judge my selfe more than any other, indebted to that common law you speake of, the exclusion from which if it could be granted me in any case, shold then be for services done me by my fathers subjects, who are thereto obliged by nature, and by the favours they daily receive; but in this case a stranger hath no place, his service not depending on the law of subjection, but on his owne free-will and election, wherewith he greatly obligeth whom he serves. But leaving this aside, me-thinks your wound hath no neede of delaying its cure, which since it is such as you tell me, let us hence to our tents, where (I hope in the gods) the danger will not prove such, but that you may be soone cur'd thereof: for there have we good Chirurgions, and withall these our mountaines are full of vertuous herbes, by meanes whereof you will in a few dayes (I hope) finde your selfe recovered and a sound man.

Polimero would no further reply, for doubt of being esteemed audacious; which she observing, put off her glove to touch his hand, as she was wont to doe to her guests, and he gently taking it in his, affectionately kissed it, to the great pleasure of them both, acutely conceiving their joyes to be equally shared. The *Marquesse* and others seeing him of so tender an age, and so rare a beauty (after interchange of courteous complements) could never have their fill of looking on him, deeming his force to be unproportionable to his yeares, and his delicacy to his valour.

Being come to the tents, and the Chirurgions sent for, he was (by speciall order from the *Princesse*) laid a-bed, and dressed in a tent not farre from hers. The wound was in the fleshy part of the flanke of a good widenesse, of no danger, and of a likelihood of being soone cured, whereof the *Princesse* was exceeding joyfull, and had willingly gone in person to visite him, but that modesty and her dignitie forbade her.

The day ensuing, it was resolved in councell, that no time, nor respite, was to be given the enemy, already halfe overthrown, but that he should be assailed in his trenches: when (as they were going out) there appeared before them some Countrey Swaines, who (delivering the *Princesse* a letter,) told her they were of *Cornetto*, where they kept prisoner the Admirall shrewdly wounded; whereupon she being verie inquisitive to know how he was taken, one of them knowing *Carasio* (who by chance waited there to know what the Councell would resolve of) answered her; the Master of that same squire there, is he that delivered him us, to bring him (as sent from him) to your Highnesse, but he is in so bad a plight at this present, as that we could not bring him along with us. Hereupon the *Princesse* (knowing *Carasio*) knew also by him, whence the present came; so as (turning
towards

towards the Councell) she said; A happy starre was it for us, that conducted hither such a Knight as this, who in a small time hath done more himselfe alone, than all our forces together; for although the overthrow at *Valentino*, and taking of *Sassari* were of importance, yet all had beene to little purpose without the taking of this Traitor and the rest, which were by him tane yesterday; calling upon this for *Carasio*, she enquired of him if what they said was true: which when hee had affirmed, and saw that she joyed much thereof, he further said; I beleeve not, that your Highnesse knowes as yet all that might in that respect make up your joyes more compleate, and thereupon acquainted her of the imprisoning of the slave; How (said she) is the slave a prisoner, and I know nothing thereof? It is most certaine (answered *Carasio*) and with that related unto her the manner how he was found at sea, by the *Marquesse of Chia*.

Scarce had he finished his discourse, when there arrived unawares a Poast from the King, who brought also letters from the same *Marquesse*, wherein (after the newes of the slave) he recommended *Polimero*, describing him by his aspect, armes, and horse, giving her withall an inkling of his being highly descended, and of his coming of purpose to serve her in that warre. Which newes afforded her (as she conceived) a colourable excuse to go see him; and therefore asked *Carasio* if a visite of hers would be discommodious unto him, who (having answered her it would not) advertized thereof his Master, who (at the *Princesse* her entrance raising himselfe on his elbow) said,

The Tent (*Madame*) in that it is your Highnesses, may perhaps deserve this favour, but never I; although I possessed all the merits in the world: (and as he would have spoken on) the *Princesse* interrupting him, said,

Since then (Sir) the Tent (as you say) is mine, it is fit that I command in mine owne house, which otherwise I would not presume to doe with you, but by way of intreaty: Repose your selfe on your pillow, or I will get me gone, courtesies are not supportable when they be prejudiciall to your wounds. There is no wound can prejudice me (answered *Polimero*) that is annointed with the precious balsome of your Highnesse favours, yet must I needs for all that obey you, for to that end was I borne. Whereat she smiling said, I could doe no lesse (Sir Knight) than come to see you, to yeeld you thanks for the present you sent me ere your arrivall hither, whereof I knew nothing till this instant; I pray the heavens I may be able to shew my selfe not ingratefull unto you, for (for my owne part) I owing so much, have (without their aide) but little to satisfie so great a debt. He then (willing to raise himselfe anew, and she charging him to lie still) made her this answer:

Your Highnesse her presence enjoyes a vertue so excellent, as it is not (either in respect of it selfe or of others) capable of receiving of the least blemish of defect, so as what in others might be perhaps stiled importunity, is in your Highnesse no other than a favour, who

being so bountifull a distributresse of your courtesies will not suffer me to goe away, without largely participating thereof, for that I well know that they point fully at me, so as I hope for more ease and good to my wounds from them, than from all the balsomes, and soveraigne herbes in the mountaines of *Sardegna*; by so much the more am I therefore indebted unto your Highnesse, by how much you exceeding with your goodnesse and bounty, the weakenesse of my deserts, deeme me worthy of that merit which no dignitie can deserve; for the rest, if presents ought to be prised for their good qualities, then hath your Highnesse no reason to thanke me for this, because among men there is not a worse than that Traytor; or if by some consequence, or motive of just revenge, your Highnesse thinke this present meritorious, yet cannot that neither make it thanke-worthy, seeing all men are obliged to justice, and Knights above all other, and yet above all Knights I, who have dedicated my selfe to your Highnesse service, ere ever I knew you.

The *Princesse*, having fixt on him her eyes whilst he spake, exactly surveying, and considering with her selfe his beaurie (which exceeded that of any other in his time) his comelinesse, and behaviour, (gifts in him naturall, and by education perfected) together with the sweetnesse of his words (which pronounced in a seemely order, and with a certaine kinde of inimitable utterance won the hearts of such as heard him) maugre the vigor of her courage, the vertue of her dignity, & her formerly made deliberation never to affect any could, not chuse but love him; which she afterwards continued with a passion so excessive, as there was never woman that ever more truly lov'd than she. Moved then with the affects of love (borne, at the first sight, or ere she beheld his face, and growne up by seeing him with his beaver off, but now waxen ripe, in both seeing and hearing him,) she rested so troubled in her minde, as she knew not what to say, till at length somewhat stammering, and bewraying with her humide eyes, the state of her burning heart, she said unto him:

What shall I say to you? (courageous Knight) sithence that your vertue being subordinated to the divinitie, a type of all vertue, contenting it selfe with it selfe, despiseth those fruits which humane vertue delights in among mortals? You will be obliged unto me, and will maintaine, that you cannot by serving of me disoblige your selfe, if humane affaires proceeded in such a fashion, then were the conditions of some miserable, and of others tyrannicall: for those straightly bound without being able to untie themselves, and these quite loose, and free from all possibilitie of becomming bound, could never hold that relation together, that nature requires equally among things not unequall. Wherefore in that we are in nature equall, and therefore necessarily borne to this relation, it must needs follow that who so serves, deserves; and that you being the obliging, I must consequently needs be the obliged unto you: otherwise (by treading the paths of divinitie) all humane wayes would be quite destroyed. Your wounds (Sir Knight) though peradventure not your actions,

actions, bewray you to be a man, and being such, how can you hold your selfe tied to this snare of obligation, and to this chaine of servitude without ever pretending either liberty or reward? Nay, not so much as commendations, being you must strip your self of that also, if you will sustaine the machine of your paradox? You free from all kinde of debt and dury, either of vassallage or otherwise, have done me so great services, as I may not endure to heare you degrade (by the indignitie of the prize) your worthy actions that so much oblige me; and if your argument were true, the gods should never be exalted by me, seeing their good turnes extended no further than to the purging the world of monsters, and to terrestriall things here below on earth, who neverthelesse ought with great reason to be adored, as those by whose meanes we receive all goodnesse. And if by the other argument you beleieve you could not oblige me in that you were already obliged to justice; give me but leave to tell you, that the just man is indeed commended onely by justice, not because wee are not all bound to be just, but because the law of justice doth not compell us to have a hand in all just causes; and therefore, you for having a hand in this, and in a cause of such a nature, and withall with the hazard of your life (whereto justice obliged not) acquire thereby the praise not onely of a just man, but also of a stout Champion, for which you deserve the guerdon, if justice cease not to be justice.

Polimero, (seeing her so profoundly dive into the center of the *Ethnickes*, with a resolution not to be vanquished) making her with all respectivenesse a submissive cringe, to manifest his yeelding as conquered, said thus unto her; Let not your Highnesse imagine (I beseech you) that I meane to oppose your courteous Tenents, by so much the rather because they tende to my favour. And although that truth in its power can doe more than all powers, this rule neverthelesse shall for this time suffer its exception; your Highnesse generositie of necessitie exceeding and surpassing truth it selfe. Pardon me (I pray you) for so saying, for had I said otherwise, it would have prov'd a species of Rebellion in my service, which (although your arguments rather stop my mouth that can expresse little, than perswade my faith, which beleeves what it ought) being it desires to conserve it selfe faithfull, cannot chuse but confesse even to the death, that the condition of my services, is nothing in comparison of the royall merits of your Highnesse, which of themselves are such as by vouchsafing to suffer them to be known, is a guerdon sufficiently satisfactorie, to whosoever is graced with the favour of knowing them.

Thus did love solace it selfe in these two Lovers, but with a certaine extraordinary order: for being wont in others to creepe by degrees, in these would he needs manifest his Deitie, and shew himselfe to be a god, though blinde, yet eyed sufficiently to spie out two spirits, who (participating of celestiall essence) merited to be by an extraordinary way infused with his graces. Therefore would hee have

have the beginning and the period to be both in the same instant, and that from their reciprocall affection, should suddenly spring forth a certaine knowledge, as if they had been long before acquainted each with other: So as (banishing all complements, and depriving them of all whatsoever they had learnt, either by nature or from the Court, in the art of dissembling;) he taught them to understand and discern the scope of their different arguments, and yet would hee have them understand mutually each the others meaning, by the secret intelligence of the meanes already adoperated.

Eromena then (breathing amorous sighs from the internall center of her heart) thus replied; I well perceive (Sir Knight) that under a false title of service, you are resolved to command me, which (for the clearing of some opposing ambiguities) makes me very desirous to know but who you are; for albeit I am constrained to yeeld unto you (were it but for your valours sake, which makes me deeme you most noble) yet should I thinke my selfe exceeding happy, if fortune therewithall concurr'd in the rest. Whereat *Polimero* (taking her by the hand, and with extreme joy kissing it) returned her this answer: Your Highnesse shall in this point be very shortly obeyed and satisfied, for I hold it more difficult by prowess to make my self knowne to be worthy of what I pretend to be already, than to bee known, for that other, who as yet is altogether unknown. Tell it then (replied the *Princesse*.) Command me it not I beseech you, said then *Polimero*; onely be but pleased that the warres first be brought to an end, and that my true service, which shall never have end, may establish its foundation of actions; this accomplished, I will not onely pray the heavens (contrarie to all my owne arguments) to be favourable in granting a reward, but will also beseech your Highnesse selfe to bestow one on me: neither shall I presume to desire it at your Highnesse hands, if fortune and nature concur not in a higher pitch, than I shall ever be able to arrive with the humility of my service, considering the infinite deserts and high merits of your Highnesse. On this *Eromena* (desirous to know him, and not allowing those his excuses) was disturbed by the *Marquesse* and other Knights, by reason of whose comming she retired her selfe thence a little after; and so did these others also, after they had passed with *Polimero* such observant tearmes of good breeding, as (because of the last newes) they judged convenient.

The morning following was *Epicamedo* assailed in his trenches; but not with any particular valour of singular persons; for the *Princesse* went not thither, and *Polimero* lay wounded, the others suffered themselves to be governed by a common and ordinary spirit, which commonly rules by ordinary meanes. So that the fortifications being good, well flanked and as well guarded, and the defendants become (by past knocks) more carefull and resolute, not to give way to the valour of the enemy, there therefore ensued an honourable retreat with small losse of men, and no disadvantage of acquired reputation.

the *Corfes* (to shew they were not vanquished) in the succeeding dayes, issued forth incessantly to their wonted skirmishes, with an intent rather of prolonging than finishing the warre; although many were of opinion that their best course had beene to retire themselves, in that their hopes were by so many contrary fortunes almost quite overthrowne. But *Epicamedo* (that of all the *Corfan* Kings was most couragious and fierce, no whit daunted to see his designs broken off, his friends lost, and himselve forsaken of such of them as survived,) had already sent post over into *Corfica* for new forces, so fortifying (in the meane time) the situation of his Campe, as hee made it of its selfe apt to beare the brunt of any sudden assault, as might tend to the forcing of his trenches, which lasted many dayes, untill the recoverie of *Polimero*, who all this while had much adoe to defend his being concealed from the urging importunity of *Eromena*.

Whilest these things were a doing, the Fleets at sea were diversly governed. The *Sardan* rode in *Porto di Torre* contented to conserve her selfe. And the *Corfan* (who was stronger by ten Galleyes) commanded as Mistresse of the sea, scowring the coast from *Tolata* to *Corfica*, without any danger, when shee leaving fresh forces, and disembarking them at *Terra-nova* (a place neere the Campe) romed over all that river, leaving alwayes eight or ten Galleyes at *Tolata* to supply such occasions, as might fall out to be necessarie, either for the affaires of the army, or the Kings service. Now when all these of the Fleete were returned from *Corfica*, and had landed foure thousand foot, fiftene of them waisted off towards *Porto di Torre*, to see if they could by any meanes draw forth into the Maine, the *Sardan* Galleyes; which under the command of a brave *Vice Admirall* lay at anchor in the haven, expecting the arrivall of the *Marquesse* of *Chia*, with a good number of Galleyes, that were a rigging and arming in the *Arcenall* of *Caleri*, towards the augmenting and reinforcing of this *Sardan Armado*.

Now the *Marquesse* had obtained of the King the office of Admirall, on condition that *Eromena* thereto consented, wherefore hee came to *Villa-petres*, and got the confirmation thereof, by meanes both of his owne merits, and of *Polimero's* intercession, to whom hee so perform'd his promise of concealing him, as the *Princesse* could not possibly come to know thereof any thing else, but generalities, wherewith albeit shee was exceedingly contented, yet remain'd shee nevertheless in a confused manner, confusedly disquieted. Returned afterwards to *Caleri*, he there staid waiting untill the Galleyes were made ready, wherewith (though inferior in number) hee hoped to affront all the *Corfan Armado*. In the meane time the other Galleyes (as I told you) lay at anchor under the command of a *Vice-Admirall*; who (because his power was limited, and his Galleyes but twelve in number) would not venture them farre, knowing that the losse of these few Vessels might occasion the ruine

of the whole enterprize. The Centrees which he kept watching ashore on the Promontory, gave him notice of the comming of the enemy, together with the precise number of their Gallies, besides one Galley more that came from a contrarie point whereof they knew not what to thinke. The *Vice-Admirall* therefore judging it a great shame to suffer himselfe to be assieged in his owne haven, the enemies having but the advantage of three galleys, or at the most but of foure (if that which was comming from the West, were also one of theirs) resolving to prepare himselfe to fight, launch'd forth of the haven in good order, not beleeving that the other Galley was any foe to them, because the kingdomes of *Spaine* and *Maiorica* (whence she seemed to come) were in good league and friendship with the *Sardegna* crowne.

By this time the *Corfes* had divided their fleete into three small squadrons, whereof two consisted of six Galleyes a-peece, and the third but of three, which (being disentangled) might succour where occasion required; And the *Sardans* divided theirs into two onely, not reserving any Galley for succour. Gotten then within shot one of the other, they began to let flie their arrowes; the three fetching a large compasse came with their Archers to charge the *Sardans* in their poope; and after they had for a good while maintained their shot (perceiving the approach of the Galley of the West that with maine force of oares came flying towards them) they went two of them to haile her, whilst the other thirteene went on to grapple with the twelve *Sardans*, with such shouts and cries, as made all the sea-coast resound at the noise thereof. The two approaching neere to that other, and seeing her with three fanals or lanthornes, but without any Standard, wondring what she might be, held still their oares; the other did the like, but carried away with the meere force of her course, she bare up so neere the other, that the *Corse* Captaine might conveniently aske her whence she was? Whereat she (knowing them for *Corfes*) plunging her oares suddenly in the waters, run full-but on the next to her, giving her such a violent shooke, as she, being but of three and twenty banckes, scaped hardly a sinking, and then being boarded by a brave squadron of Knights, was (after a short skirmish) taken, with the death of such as strove to defend her. Meane while her fellow-galley, thinking this stranger so busied as she could not resist her assault, resolved to charge her sterne, where having settled her snout on the ladder, and reach'd out their grappling hookes to hold her firme, that so they might mount her by skaling, they were beaten backe by one Knight alone, that threw downe into the sea above fifteene of them one after another, who were there drown'd with the weight of their armour; the rest (playing wide off with their arrowes) were in a case but little better, because the enemy (being exceedingly well armed) showred such clouds of arrowes, as forced this Galley to forsake her lost fellow, and flie backe to the rest for safegard; but the stranger (not weying the want of her men that were aboard the other *Cors*, seeing they were Masters thereof)

thereof) made amaine after this, whom she overtaking assailed, and in a short time (boording her with her men) made her fellow captive with the other; and because she could not chuse but use some cruelty towards her for the assuring her self of her the more speedily (she being resolved to succour those others of *Sardegna*) she cut in pieces almost all the souldiers, and withall cut off her oare-ties that she might not runne away; which done, she bent her course towards the *Corfan Admirall*; who, not able to sustaine a new assault, having had but too much to doe with the *Sardan Vice-Admirall*, remained in the power of the *Sardans*. Then after assailing another, and taking her, it came to passe, that the *Corfans* first losing their ods of vessels, and afterwards over-match'd with disparity and disadvantage, were all of them taken, so as there escaped not as much as a Pinnaee of all their number.

The *Vice-Admirall*, who before was in a doubtfull plight, and had (without this succour) for all his valour gotten the worst of the day, not knowing whose that Galley might be, went aboard a Frigate, and come to her poope, he saw that Knight (that with his owne hands had tumbling downe so many over-boord) clad in costly armour, of a Majestick aspect, and environed with a ring of noble Knights, that honoured him as their Lord; and therefore imagining he could be no lesse than a *Prince*, he kneel'd downe before him; when the other (not permitting him) said, Stand up (Sir Knight) for I may not heare you in such a posture, wherupon he (rising up) answered; I will obey you (my Lord) for all things oblige me so to doe, yet shall this not hinder me to acknowledge, that your presence merits to be by me spoken unto in such a posture and fashion. I know I enjoy this victorie by your meanes, and that it is to you, that the kingdome of *Sardegna* owes this debt. I am therefore come to yeeld you thanks for it, not conformable to your dignitie, though such as may be better expressed by the affection of a gratefull heart, than by the unpolisht language of a Knight that is more Mariner than Courtier. I will say no more, because I judge your qualitie to be such, that to offer you my selfe with these Galleyes, sav'd by your valour, would adde so little to your greatnesse; as you would peradventure disdaine them. I am not indeede Admirall of this flete, and therefore possesse not such absolute authoritie as were requisite for your service; neverthelesse, so great is the service that the King my Sovereigne hath received of you, as I may in this particular without presumption assume full authoritie, which shall be to offer you, besides his Galleyes, and those that man them, whose hearts you have by your helpe won already, those also of the enemies, acquired by your armies, that you may dispose of them, as to you may seeme good, being well assured that I can never doe a service more acceptable than this to my Sovereignes the King and *Princesse*.

The Knight that had all this while listened unto him with a constant Majestie, changing it now into a smiling countenance, thus replied; (Sir Knight) I can doe no lesse than accept very kindly your

Noble courtesie which you could never have manifested by a more generous spirit than your owne; but as it befits me not to accept it according to the largenesse of your offer, so hold I it very inconvenient not to accept of some portion thereof, and that shall be your amitie. Leaving the rest for you and your souldiers, together with the honour of the day, whereof if you will yet needs have me participate, it shall suffice me to have with my comming, hastned your victorie. I am *Metaneone, Prince of Mauritania*, come hither to finde out a brother of mine, who (I know well) is come to *Sardegna*, with the *Marquesse of Chia*, to make one in these warres; I have a great desire to get a sight of him; and because he (for some respects) will perhaps conceale himselfe from me, and shun my presence; I would faine be so directed as I might unawares come to finde him out, ere he knew any thing of my comming, wherein if you can further me, you shall oblige me exceedingly.

The *Vice-Admirall*, notwithstanding the *Princes* commands, kneeled downe before him, and because he could not come to kisse his hand, he reverently kissed the skirt of his armour, and then (raised up againe) he said,

Most valourous *Prince*, to reply or repeate things already spoken were superfluous, especially considering that of so great a *Prince* as is your Highnesse, all gifts are to be accepted, as I also accept all, save onely one, whereof your Highnesse (though liberall) ought not to be prodigall, and that is the honour of this dayes conquest; which if it happen that your Highnesse refuse, I will erect to fame a Trophee thereof, so great, as you shall be (whether you will or no) constrained to accept it. And as concerning the rest, had you not mentioned particularly the *Marquesse of Chia*, I could not have certainly satisfied your desire in any thing; yet now I know that the youth that came with him, lives unknowne, and hath performed such martiall exploits, as it is most necessarie and requisite that *Sardegna* being already engaged to the one for his land enterprizes, rest obliged to the other also for his atchievements by sea: he hath kept his bed (wounded) almost this moneth, and lives (not farre hence) in the Campe with the *Princesse*. If your Highnesse please to goe thither by land, your way will be the shorter, but more difficult, if by sea, more commodious, sudden and unexpected; whither I will waite on your Highnesse, together with the whole Fleete; for in that the King of *Corfica* hath but tenne Galleyes now left, I intend to seize on them, ere they can come to know any thing of the losse of the others. Nor can the King *Epicamedo* escape death or imprisonment, when hee shall be thus deprived of his Gallies, being that he can hope for no helpe from the Rebels; the greatest part whereof are taken prisoners, and the remaining three, fled.

The *Prince* commending this deliberation as prudent, and seconded with the approbation of the *Count of Bona*, told him, that hee himselfe would partake with him in that enterprize, the rather because that way was most commodious for him. Returned therefore to

Porto di Torre, and leaving there the Galleyes they tooke, (except foure which they caused suddenly to be arm'd and mann'd, re-inforcing the others with the *Corfanghing*) they set out for their determined voiage.

Polimero kept his bed longer than he made account to doe, for getting up one day to goe skirmish, his wound then halfe cured, bruised by his armour, began to ranckle and fester; wherefore the *Princesse* would not suffer him to arme himself any more, till such time as that wound were fully cur'd, together with two mote given him the same day. It grieved him to the heart to see the *Princesse* in all dangers, and himselfe not able to succour her, the rather because the enemy was so well fortified in his Campe, with sundry Forts and redouts over all the field, as made him even despaire. Such was (in the meane time) the affection betweene them, that it was impossible to beleeve how strongly it was joyned with a passing modest discretion (a well knowne enemy to fervent love:) but too too greene youth in the one, and native modestie in the other, moderated their affections, whence sprung those effects in love unacustomed.

The *Princesse* could by no meanes come to know who he was; which made her often vex at her selfe for having had so little forecast, as not to have forced the *Marquesse* of *Chia* to tell it her, assuring her selfe that he well knew it, although he made shew of the contrary, the rather because in his letter to her he wrote, that hee was of a high descent. And albeit she could beleeve no lesse but that she was beloved (for had she but imagined otherwise, she had beene dead a thousand times) nevertheless this constant concealing himselfe put her in doubt, causing her to *sylogize*; That who so loveth, the same obeyeth the thing or subject beloved, but he obeyed not (because he told her not who hee was) and therefore he loved her not. Another time she would imagine that he concealed himselfe for not being able to make himselfe knowne to be of such blood as might be deemed any way worthy of her: Or if he were, that then he did but professe affection onely to passe away the time (during the continuance of his stay there,) in pleasing his humour with the title of love. But when she considered how his royall manners unmasked him, repenting her selfe of her censure, she accused her judgement of temeritie, it grieving her that she had her spirits so offuscated as in not knowing him, not to know her selfe. Onely shee was certaine, that if this torment lasted, her life could not long endure, growne already impotent with the tedious suffering the violent fits of her amorous feaver, wherewith she had every day such a bickering, as caused the corals and roses fade away from her sweetly Majesticall face, like one languishing and fainting under the burthen of some tyrannous disease: which gave many cause to conjecture, that the delicacie of her sex kept disproportioned companie with the stoutnesse of her courage, and that watching, weight of armes, and other discommodities of the warres diminished the excellencie of her beautie, so that if the warre continued, it might well revive in her the valour of

Perosilo, but quite destroy the beauties of *Eromena*.

Polimero on the other side, the more his externall wounds healed, the more did his internall exasperate and fret. Well was he assured of the love of the *Princesse*, which made him not become insolent (conformable to the levity of youth,) nay rather, though neither his starres had enclined him, nor her beauties and good parts forced him to love her, yet had meere gratitude (a great mistress of gentle spirits) beene powerfull enough (without either influence of starres, or attraction of beauties) to have compell'd him (in a certaine manner) even to adore her. And how much rather then by inclination or compulsion, was hee constrained to doe it for divers other respects? When he considered the excellency of her singular endowments, by so much the more worthy of all merits, by how much the vertues of both sexes being united in her, had of the *Idea* of beauties (compartible among all women) formed one woman alone, and withall (to make her more admirable) conferr'd on her al manly valour and courage. And that therefore his was a fortune fortunate, above all fortunes, to be belov'd of her, who above all other women merited the sacrifice of all hearts. And if every great *Prince* (how potent soever) had reason to esteeme himselfe happy, if he came to receive but the least of those favours, which he hourly enjoy'd; by how much the more should he, being poore, without meanes, and the meanest of all his brothers, thinke himselfe (among the happiest) most truly happy? It grieved him he obey'd her not in a matter so friuolous, which she so much desired to know; yet he excused it, in that he was ashamed to manifest himselfe ere he had given a more ample expression of his merits; because the being sprung from bloud Royall, was but a qualitie to content the world. The noblenesse of a minde so divine, as exceeded all Royall state, requiring a qualitie more sublime to content it selfe; so as he for being not able to reach with the lownesse of his services to the hight of her perfections would have utterly dispaired thereof, if he desire to serve her, more than the service it selfe (eternally inferior to his duty) had not made the way of her favour easie to his merits.

Little else could *Polimero* ponder in his minde, the greenenesse of his yeares not affording him as yet other effectuall affections, than the lesse secret, and his want of experience, depriving him of the light of nature, which is wont to beare a great sway, even in childhood it selfe, unlesse a true love (interposing it selfe) engender a vertuous eclipse; his speculations were altogether of abstractions, for in not knowing he knew, and though he knew not how, yet well knew he what he would faine have, and what he would faine not have: Full little was he as yet aware of that the negative might have place in a courteous Lady; he being not (ever so little) acquainted with those things, (which though sued for) might be without discourtesie denied. Much was he troubled and vexed for his hurts, thinking that the time spent in healing his wounds, wounded him in losing so much time in her service, his heart perswading him, that (with the ardent

ardent desire he had to deserve her) he found himselfe sufficiently encouraged to chase away, not onely from his trenches, but even from *Sardegna*, both *Epicamedo* and *Mars* himselfe.

Whilst *Polimero* stood thus feeding his amorous melancholy, in came the *Princesse*, who accustomed to come every day to visite him, and the better to shadow her affection, held her councill of warre about his bed, under pretext (for the honour due to his valour) to receive also his opinions. Where, after thanking her for the trouble and paines she vouchsafed to take in comming to visite him, he besought her to give him leave to goe out to the field, for that hee well saw that that aire agreed not with her constitution, and that therefore she being unaccustomed to hardnesse and disasters should doe well to take some course to avoide them. Whereunto the *Princesse* (that well knew the cause of her alterations) made answer:

My Lord, you would faine governe your selfe, according to the greatnesse of your stout spirit, which at this present ought to resigne its government to your person, that may not be otherwise ruled than according to your present indisposition; you well know and feele what prejudice you have got thereby already; I pray you thinke on it, that it may serve you for a warning, to dehort you from incurring againe into the like inconvenience. My indisposition is not such as you take it for, neither doth any toile prevaile over any tender-nesse or ease that I have beene formerly used unto; Have but a little patience, and when the Chirurgians condescend that you may (without danger) get up, then will I also bee therewith contented.

Whilst thus with reiterated supplications *Polimero* endeavored to obtaine his request, there entred into the tent *Carasio* with a Currier come from *Porto di Terra*, who kneeling downe before the *Princesse*, delivered her a letter, which opened, she found to be the *Vice-Admirals*, and contained the newes of the victory, obtained against the enemies with the conquest of fifteene Galleyes; which chanced him by the aid of one Galley, commanded by a most noble Knight. And that now he was resolved (having arm'd foure Galleyes of those fifteene he had taken, and reinforced the rest) to assaile (with the assistance of that other Galley) *Epicamedo's Armado* at *Terranuova*; whereof hee would render an account to her Highnesse, whom hee besought to charge the enemy by land, in the selfesame time, if it seemed good to her Highnesse so to doe.

The *Princesse* having read this letter, gave it *Polimero*; and sending for the Councill of warre, caused it to be read unto them, who approved of the opinion of the *Vice-Admirall*. And because the sea was about two and twenty miles thence distant, there were placed many Centrees along the mountaine towards *Castrodesen*, who (as soone as they saw the Fleete appeare and assaile the *Corfan Armado*) were to give a signall, with smoke in severall places, which was performed with such secrecie, that no man knew it, except the Councill, and him that (standing Centree at the sea) might serve to
give

give all the rest directions; nor was there any danger of his falling into the hands of the enemy, because the *Sardan* horse was Commander of the field.

Polimero (when the Councell was gone) turned towards the *Princesse*, saying, Alas, and will your Highnesse doe me this shame, to let me lie lulled here amongst the feathers in such an occasion of service, when others toile themselves abroad in the field? Not I by any meanes, (answered the *Princesse*) so that the Chirurgians permit you but to goe abroad; and as she would have spoken on, in came the Chirurgians to dresse him, who were so favourable towards him in their opinions, that the *Princesse* was contented hee should get him up.

Much was *Polimero* troubled in minde, ever since he had read the *Vice-Admirals* letter, wondering with himselfe, what, or who might be that most noble Knight therein mentioned. On this, jealousy already crept into his imagination began full cruelly to sting him, making him beleeve that it was some *Prince*, who (moved with the fame of *Eromena*) was come thither of purpose to serve her. And because his heart was tortured with the passion he felt, therefore he resolved rather to die than endure to have any rivall; so easily is humane wit altered, when it is once ravished with its affections: seeing that he who before breath'd forth nought else but vertue, now stung with the Serpent of amorous envy (for such was his (though unreasonable) being that he neither saw his favours participated, nor any person partakeable of them) he suffered himselfe to be guided with the false imagination of having a rivall, till the day wherein he was cleared of that doubt, with no small amazement and griefe of *Eromena*; who on the other side raved therefore, beleeving that his minde (surprised by some new thought) had fully alienated from her his affection. And so indeede seemed it to be, he wanting art to dissemble his passions; which concealed, though not disguised, deceived the judgement, that tooke the one for the other: so as if *Eromena* were therein mistaken, yet was she not to be therefore blamed, because *Polimero* an experienced youth, reasoned with himselfe on this businesse, as if she had beene faultie, and as if her beauties and good parts ought not to have had the force of attracting other than him alone; in so much as he became fretfull, and pettish, never beholding her but with troubled browes, manifest expressers of more troubled thoughts: whilst shee that passionately loved him (knowing what little reckoning he made of his wounds) could by no meanes imagine what might be the cause of so suddaine an alteration; whereof she conceived such a griefe as pierc'd through her verie soule. She therefore desirous to be resolved thereof, conducted him aside towards the trenches (under pretext of finding out a convenient place to assaile the forts) where (after a short discourse of what might there be done, and seeing him possessed with his accustomed desire of combating) she said unto him,

My Lord, I would not by any meanes, that the greatnesse of your
courage

courage should any way prejudice your health, I well perceive you much altered, since you left your bed, the reason whereof cannot possibly be, other than the feeling of your self not well; which if it be so, I pray you let me know it, assuring you that I have a greater share than you beleeve in your sufferings: And I protest unto you, that if your wounds endanger you, by reason of a re-lapse (as some dayes since they did) I shall be therewith displeased, and shal judge it a displeasure done me by you. *Polimero*, who well understood what it was to be a sharer in his sufferings, and what signified the declaration of her displeasure; dying his cheeks with a faire vermilion, and become fully consoled, returned her this answer; I yeeld your highnes humble thanks, for vouchsafing to take care of my health; which (among many other your noble favours) manifests how deeply I am engaged unto you, and could I but fully assure your Highnesse of what is unknowne unto you, I assure my selfe that your Highnesse would rest satisfied with my reverent gratitude. As for my hurts, your Highnesse needes not doubt of them, my wounds being now growne to a good passe; but if you see me malecontent, I think I have good cause so to be for to tel you the truth, it likes me not wel, that any other come to rob us of the glory of this war; and had your Highnes but given me leave when first I besought you for it, I assure my selfe that we had constrain'd *Epicamedo* either to returne or die, ere any other came to deprive him of his army, and mee of the honour of doing my obliged duty. *Eromena* by her acutenesse of apprehension, soone conceived *Polimero's* drift, whereof she was very joyfull, well knowing that jealousie in its limits, is a daughter of love: wherefore she said unto him; Let not (I pray you) what hath hapned displease you, which shall (I assure you) be for your greater consolation and honour; the coming of any other shal neither deprive you of that honour which your valorous actions deserve, nor me of the obligation which I shall ever owe you therefore, more than to any Knight of the world, how great or worthy soever he be; whereof assure your selfe, and live contentedly, if the being therof assur'd have any power to make you such. Hereupon *Polimero* gently took her by the hand, which she liberally reached out unto him (& affectionately kissing it) remained the joyfulest man living: with great desire stood he expecting the signall of smoak, which the day following appearing, made the *Sardans* give an all-arme, though few of them understood the meaning therof; which *Epicamedo* seeing, knew not what to thinke, but perceiving them divided into three squadrons, and advancing forwards to come and assault his forts, he also caused for their defence, an allarme to be beaten. But *Polimero*, who was of opinion, that to assaile the forts was lost labour, and that it wold prove the better course to make on, & become masters of the tents, if they could (for the forts left alone unsuccour'd, would afterwards fall of themselves) wheeld about a large compassse; and then causing all his troope to alight, he assaulted the trenches on the reare parts thereof suddenly, and with such a furie, that he forced the guard thereof, and was himselfe the first man that

entred, where leaving to make good the front a strong Squadron of horsemen, though a-foote, he with the rest remounted on horse-backe, beating downe all hee met; wherein hee found no great difficultie, because there were no horse to withstand him (they being issued forth with the King together with the greatest part of the armie to defend that part, where the assault was most likely to be given:) and so in lesse than an houres space, became master of all the Tents.

The *Princesse* on the other side (as soone as by the cries she perceived the troopes to bee in a hot conflict) spurr'd on-wards; till (passing betweene Fort and Fort) followed by her force, she affronted *Epicamedo*, who making head with those few horses he had, not able to hold out long, was forc'd to retire himselfe, causing a Squadron of pikes to set forwards in firme battell-array: By whom the *Princesse* seeing her selfe opposed, caused hers to advance, who (after a small resistance) put the enemy to rout for want of horse. Then *Eromena* (disdaining to besmeare her hands with the blood of the vulgar) went searching for *Epicamedo*, who having understood how the Tents were set upon, was runne to their succour, leaving in his stead the *Marquesse* of *Sagona*: Whereupon she (having selected a troope of the choicest horse, and left the rest to the charge of the *Marquesse* of *Oristagno*) pursuing him eagerly, found that *Polimero* (after he had taken the Tents) was come forth to charge *Epicamedo*; who had with him but a small Battalion of horse, not amounting to six hundred; but all of them of the prime Nobilitie of *Corfica*, his greatest confidence being in his foote that failed him; for when they saw the Tents taken, the enemy victorious in the front, and now come to charge them in the flank (themselves being therewithal disordered, and the greatest part without any pikes for having burst them in the former incounter) growne quite heartlesse, they sought to save themselves by flight: so as being for their better way of escape divided, they were (for the most part) slaine, whilst the King skirmishing with *Polimero*, and hurt in the hand and flank, was forc'd to yeeld himselfe. Of the six hundred horse escaped but a few, who flying towards the Fleete with hope to save themselves, were met by those that were comming to bring newes of its losse, and then being all scattered abroad some in in one place and some in another, they were by the Peasants rob'd and killed.

Polimero (having laid the King in sure hold) ran under the Forts, where the fight was yet maintained; but the *Corfes* (not able to withstand any longer, nor having any place of retraite) throwing downe their armes, yeelded themselves, the greatest part of them being already slaine in the first hot skirmish; and the Forts (after they had stood as spectators of the slaughter of their men, and imprisonment of their King) yeelded themselves over into the mercy of the vanquishers. Thus were the Tents taken, the Forts rendred, assaulted, and won in lesse than two houres space. And

now

now *Eromena*, desirous to see what fortune had done with the Fleete at sea (leaving all the foote to repose themselves) taking along with her *Polimero* and two thousand horse, set her selfe on her way towards *Terranova*.

Metaneone used such diligence in this voyage, that (without helpe of any winde) he in one nights space compassed about all *Capo Luogodori* to *Terranova*, being little lesse than a hundred and twenty miles, where he found the *Corfes* without suspicion, and had found them also buried in sleepe, without either watch or ward, had not the Fleete as it passed by *Capo di Sarda*, beene descried; he found them with armes in their hands, not because they made account to fight, but onely to observe the termes of martiall discipline: They tooke these Galleyes to be their owne, returning (as they thought) victorious, and the two over and besides the fiftene, to be prizes taken away from the enemy; the rather because the three lanternes were not borne by their Admirall; but when they descried the colours of *Sardegna*, and on the Royall those of *Mauritania*, they knew not what course to take: flie away they could not, because their ladders were a-shore their hatches out of order, and some of them unfurnisht with oares; so as being assaulted, there was more adoe to kill than to conquer them; and such of them as escaped a-shore, met with the *Princesse* and were taken prisoners. *Metaneone* seeing the enterprize so well succede, was very glad thereof, and long'd for with impatience the long-wish'd for fruition of his brothers company, commanding therefore to disembark the horse, one of the Centrecs comming stealthily towards him, wished him to retire, for that he had descried many troopes of horse, which could be no other than the enemies, seeing they came from that part of the field whereof they were Masters.

Metaneone (thus surprizd) knew not what to resolve of, thinking it a shame to retire, and a desperate danger to stay their comming; When the *Vice-Admirall* said thus unto him, I cannot beleve that these are enemies; or if they be, I am sure they have but a few horse, wherewith they can doe us no great harme: howsoever as it is not fit we leave the Galleys unmann'd, so is it not any discredit or dishonour for us to retire untill we be better assured of the matter: let us therefore (if you please) retire every man to his charge. The *Prince* thereupon (seeing the *Count de Bona* of the selfesame opinion) made a faire retraite, causing the Archers to stand ready at the loope-holes, and all the rest with their armes in hand. But no sooner appeared those horse in sight, than the *Vice-Admirall* knew the *Princesse* by her Banner, and *Metaneone* his brother by *Flammauro*. Being then sorry hee had retired, he came a-shore from the Galley, followed by the *Count de Bona*, and all the other Knights.

The *Princesse* and *Polimero* never lin gallopping till they came to the haven: where the first man of all the fleete that *Polimero* knew, was the *Count of Bona* his governour, and then next his brother; whereat with a shrill voice he suddenly scritch'd out, Oh ye gods what is this I see?

The *Princesse* (seeing that something ailed him) asked him what was the matter? Nothing *Madam* (answered he) but that I cannot imagine what this *Prince* makes here. And whilst she was asking him what *Prince* that was (without getting any answer of *Polimero*, who remained as yet astonished) they were come to the place where hee was. *Eromena* perceiving *Metaneone* comming to meet her, hearing him stil'd *Prince*, lighted off her horse, to whom *Metaneone* drew neere to kisse her hand, which shee not permitting, and he not persisting in his offer (as a courteous Kinght should have done) but running (as if hee had beene besides himselfe) to *Polimero*, hee straightly embraced him, saying, And will you (my sweete brother) be perpetually mindfull of my foule fault? What, will you abjure nature, and for one discourteous brothers sake, abandon a loving father that tenders you so dearly? Behold me here in token of repentance, desiring your pardon; I beseech you forgive me: Suffice it you, that the knowledge of an error is a sufficient punishment to a generous heart; if such you can but thinke mine to be, that have so undeservedly offended you. But (my dearest best of brothers) doe but consider how all things have their time; the wrongs are done and past, the repentance is now present, and the penance shall bee to serve you, now when my service is not acceptable unto you; which if it were or could be, I should esteeme it a great honour unto me. These his words were accompanied with teares so lively, that (whilst he on the one side embraced him, and the *Count of Bona* on the other side kissed his hands, and wept over him like a child) the standers by were forced to beare them company in doing the same, though altogether ignorant of the mysterie of their proceedings.

Polimero at the first, knowing his brother and his disposition, could not chuse but doubt of some evill intention; but afterwards seeing him come in such a fashion and speake unto him in such a manner, accompanied besides with the *Count* whom he wel knew would not deceive him, striving to unhelme himself but could not (so transported was he with the overmuch haste he made, and of the strange commotion of his affections) having lifted up his beaver, he taking his brothers hand, would needs kisse it, with no lesse respective humilitie, and humble respectivenesse, than he would have used towards his Royall father. But *Metaneone* more and more affectionately embracing him, and closing his face to the vizard, could not sariate himselfe in kissing him, not affording him leasure to speake a word, much lesse to answer. *Carasio* seeing what his Master would faine have done, help'd him off with his helme; whereof *Polimero* being freed ran againe to kisse his brothers hand, and he in the meane time with affectionate embraces, clasped him so closely, as it was impossible for him to speake a word, untill at last, quite wearied with kissing and weeping, they were faine to desist. When *Polimero* after a short pauze turning towards his brother, said;

My Lord, I know not how I have merited so much of the gods, as

to

to be (for ought I see) received into your gracious favour; I will not flatter my selfe in beleeving that I deserve it, but beleeve rather that your goodnes mov'd to pittie my youth, hath bin pleased to exceede all excesse of courtesie, by receiving me in the degree of such a faithfull servant as my duty binds to be, and of so obedient a brother as nature made me. I beseech you vouchsafe to concede me onely the first attribute, in your esteeme, and that shall content me; so that your Highnesse would be pleased to accept in good worth the sinceritie of my good will, excusing the weakenesse of my yeares, which have given your Highnesse occasion to be displeased with me; but of my willingnesse to deserve your Highnesse favour, let (I beseech you) my voluntarie exile, and my choise of going unaccompanied (to avoid your Highnesse displeasure) be an assured token: for the rest I submit my selfe to your good will and pleasure, being most ready to doe whatsoever you shall please to command me.

Metaneone, that had converted his former hatred into the most perfect affectionate and truest friendship that could possibly be found in any brother of the world, embracing him anew, said unto him; Oh peace, peace, my deare *Polimero*, it becomes not you to speake in this sort, for the witnesses that testifie against me are without exception, and above all, my owne conscience. I am not come with an intention to grant you pardon, but of purpose to begge and receive it from you, so that you then forgive me, I shall thinke I have obtained the greatest part of the happinesse I wish to enjoy in this world.

Faine would they have exceeded, when the *Count of Bona* (interrupting them) said to the *Prince*; No more, (my Lord) no more. My Lord, the *Infante Polimero* cannot brooke to see the person of your Highnesse so submissive; neither neede you doubt that his good nature is any whit mindfull of what is done and past. Which said, he (taking againe the hands of *Polimero*) kissed them with a fatherly affection.

The *Princesse* that stood all this while an amazed spectatresse, having (the meane while) caused her helme to be unlaced, said to *Metaneone*; (Worthy *Prince*) I beseech you give me leave to interrupt your joyes, we can no longer forbear to know who you are, as well that we may thereby come to know what this Knight also is, (who having done us such notable service would never hitherunto oblige us with his name;) as also that we may honour you conformable to the merits both of your noble person, and of the favours you have done us; which said, she withdrew him aside from the rest, whilst *Polimero* went againe to embrace the *Count* and to entertaine the *Mauritanian Cavaliers*.

Metaneone related orderly unto the *Princesse* all that had passed betweene him and his brother, and how his father had charged him to bring him backe againe: which when the *Princesse* heard, she thought her former joyes but bitter now, that she understood her lover to be a *Prince*, waxing so pale thereat, that the apprehensive *Prince* obser-

ving it, said on; My charge was indeede not to returne without him; but in respect I see what warres your Highnesse is like to have in your Kingdome, and withall for that (me thinkes) I see that my brother hath beene fortunate in your Highnesse service, I will finde a way to content my father without taking him hence.

The *Princesse* having by this time recovered her spirits, well perceived the acutenesse of the *Prince* his apprehension, which though it made her blush, yet was she not thereat displeased; but entertained him with all such gentle termes, as best became a courteous Lady to use towards a deserving *Prince*; hoping to finde him a co-adjutor and furtherer of her desires: And then turning towards *Polimero*; Is it thus (said she) that you deale with your friends; My Lord *Infante Polimero*; in not suffering your selfe to be knowne, thereby to loade me with shame for not having honoured you conformable to your birth and qualitie? Whereunto he (all joyfull) made answer, (Right excellent *Princesse*;) Too too much have I beene honoured by your Highnesse, I would it pleased the gods, that you thought me worthy but of some part thereof. Whereupon she taking him by the hand, (and joying together for the arrivall of the *Prince* his brother) wrung it amorously, and he againe affectionately kissed hers, to his exceeding great content.

The *Princesse*, afterwards and all the rest, when they understood the manner of taking both the Fleetes, went to renew their complements with *Metaneone*, confessing the warre to be brought to an end by the valour of these two brothers.

The End of the Third Booke.

CAVALIER
GIO:FRANCESCO
BIONDI HIS
EROMENA

The Fourth Booke.



That evening taried the *Princesse* (somewhat incommodated) in *Terranova*, whence she advertized the *Marquesse* of *Oristagno* how the Fleete was taken; (and in regard her comming thither was unexpected, and her necessarie provision as then not arrived from the *Campe*,) *Metaneone* perswaded her to sup with him in his Galley, which he caused to launch out of the haven with the sweete

confort of his trumpets, at the pleasing harmony whereof, the Ghing rowed so mainely, as they made her in lesse than an houres space out-strippe her fellow Gallies (which were the *Vice-Admirall* with three others of the choicest of the whole Fleete) leaving them (to the wonder of every one) above three miles a-poope of her. Much adoe had the *Princesse* to satiate her eyes in beholding the rare beautie of the Vessell, with the rich curiositie of her hangings and furniture, which farre exceeded those of many royall Palaces.

It was now Summer-season, and the calme-sea was from the shore-ward courted with a gentle breath of aire, whilst the sea-strond
and

and winding creeks of the Iland, afforded the eye a spacious and delightfome prospect. The *Princesse* (in the meane while) was served with such exquisite diversitie of banquets, as that she seemed to be in a dreame; so strangely was she amazed in observing the abundant quantitie, and rare qualitie thereof, together with the richnesse of the plate, and order of service in a Galley at sea. And to the *Sardans* the wine (above any thing else) seemed excellent, who now perceived themselves deceived in the opinion, they til then held, that their white-wines were the best and richest of the Vni-verse.

The *Prince* had for his pleasure divers kinds of strange creatures, which *Affricke* is continually and daily accustomed to produce; wherewith the *Princesse* was exceedingly delighted, because they being tame, were very gentle and tractable, and euery one in his kinde manifested by his gesture the diversitie of his temperature, wherein Nature discovereth the treasures of her providence.

It grew towards night, when intending to returne, they descried (not very farre off them) something that floted on the sea; which such as at first tooke it for a fish, perceived it to be none, for that it dived not but stood still, without turning, either for the noise of the oares, or voice of men. The *Princesse*, who (taking pleasure to looke all about) was the first that saw it, would needs know what it might be, and therefore causing to row gently towards it, ere they came to touch it with their oares, she perceived it was a woman, who fast-handing a little plancke, floted on the sea. The *Frigat* (which stood neere the *Royall*, and that for swiftnesse was not her inferiour) went to fetch her aboard, where they found, for subject to their consideration, an exquisite beautie that in her they saw, with the evident symptoms of a miserable fortune; pale was she, and leane, bare-footed, and bare-legged, with her feete sorely bruised, and full of gags and scarres. Mong't these so rue-full conditions, there shined in her face a royall Majestie, and in her dying eyes a pittie, able to cause to moane the very *Tigers* themselves. There covered her snow-white bodie (which by her alablaster legges and ivory armes, might easily be judged to be such) a course gowne of shippes russet freeze, made carelessly without any order, just like one of those, wherewith statues are sometimes wont to bee covered withall: hardly could they make her let goe her hold of the plancke, because, when danger, travell and fasting had bereaved her of her understanding; then nature, which in such occasions failes not, had forc'd her vitall spirits into her hands and fingers; so as now freed from perill, and not comprehending it, she continued her holdfast without slacking it any thing, following altogether the instinct that governed her, being not able to follow reason, which she wanted, because she wanted the more ignoble part, which was the sense. There was none so flintie-hearted, as not to pittie so compassionate a spectacle; but farre above all the *Princesse*, who having caused her to be laid on a bed, was carefull to see her dri'd by her trusty damsell *Aretia*. Who not like a
waiting

waiting woman, but like a diligent Squire followed her Lady without ever abandoning her for feare of any danger how perillous soever; she dried, rub'd and chafed her, so as her revoked spirits return'd by little and little to their proper residences, to the astonishment of the miserable weake one; who seeing her selfe in such a place, knew not what to imagine; she peer'd stedfastly on the two standers by, her mouth shee opened, but spake never a word; in being silent she spake, and yet in speaking she uttered never a syllable, tormented with agitations of minde, the more grievous, for that the body oppressed with long sufferings, lay as if it had beene deprived both of life and senses. The first things that came to life in her were sighs and sobs; and next teares, which being not sufficient to exhale and evaporate the heaviness of her heart, would faine be accompanied with a kinde of a voice not shrieking or displeasing, but moaning and wailefull, able to move the very stones to pittie. The *Princesse* (who with her damzell were all that were of her sex among all that company) would needs be a sole co-adjutor in this charitable office, having for modesties sake excluded all the rest; and calling for some cordials and restoratives, gave them her with her owne hand, comforting her, entreating her, and courteously compelling her to take them; because no one meanes alone was sufficient to perswade her, neither had altogether prevailed with her, but that fixing her eyes on the royall she-warrior, she became astonisht at her beautie and behaviour, which perswaded, and (as it were) constrained her to obey her; little ate she, when having recovered a little vigor, she turning towards the *Princesse*, with a feeble voice scarce audible, said thus unto her;

I know not (faire one) what you may be, whether a woman or a goddesse, if a goddesse, then know you well that pittie is ill bestowed on me, and that it were true commiseration not to give, but to take away the feeling of my griefes: but if a woman, let me then tell you, that the having used it to me-wards, hath beene a crueltie, as in me nature it selfe was more cruell in procuring my escape, and I most cruell against my selfe for following her instincts, which said, she (become clay-cold) remained in such a plight, that for a good while she seemed to be rather dead than alive.

The *Princesse*, who by her speeches (which oftentimes are expresse signes of inward conceits) conceived to be in this woman some (of I know not what) kinde of worth and singularitie, having cald for vinegar and odoriferous waters, ceased not to use her uttermost endeavour with affectionate care to revive her againe, which quickly succeeded as shee desired; and seeing her come againe to her selfe, though little better in the rest of her organs and members, onely she strove to get up to come to kisse her hands; the courteous *Princesse* (holding her downe, and incessantly besprinkling her with those waters) spake thus unto her;

Alacke (good soule) Leave off I pray you all other thoughts, but such as concerne your selfe, courtesies in you are now out of season,

P

neither

neither is there any one here that lookes for any such, which though there were, yet might such be well satisfied with your willingnesse, which in you appeares not otherwise resisting than against your selfe and your owne good. Be comforted, I pray you, and resolve with your selfe to live; for albeit your afflictions be great (as I imagine them to be by the condition wherein I found you;) nevertheless ought you by all meanes be comforted; good and evill stand not alwayes in the same limits; that evill is onely deplorable that is altogether remediable, and in such a case necessitie should comfort us; fortune (Sister) is unstable, and her wheele voluble, so as we ought the rather presume to looke for good, being in an ill case, than on the contrary; for as good cannot attaine to excesse, so can it not bee either long or stable; and the excesse of evils, as it is easily encountered, so is it also as easily diverted, it being a sting that so long lasts, as the maligne aspects endure, which as they increase in their excesse, so decrease they in their recess, and with its mutation change themselves into a better aspect. The sicke woman, who with great attention had listned unto her (fetching a deepe sigh) return'd her this answer.

Alas (Valorous Lady) what dolefull consolations are these for me; grounded on a foundation as sandy as are constellations? But, if what you inferre, bee true; What then (I pray you) is the reason, that few are the fortunate, and innumerable the unfortunate in the world, who withall ever remaine such? Or if they assay mutation, yet is it not substantiall, but onely somewhat extenuated from more to lesse. How many are there that live in continuall poverty? How many in perpetuall imprisonment? How many are there that are miserable in all kinde of misery, whom (in regard of the infinitenesse of the number) I neede not specifie? And yet in them may be discerned many accesses and fits of evill, but never a period of any, for they never feele its recess, although the heavens goe round to them as well as to others, neither goe the starres slower for these than for those. And as touching what you say of good and prosperitie, It is true, that there is nothing more slippery and flickering, nay such is it of its owne nature, as it cannot make it selfe enjoyable; the passions of the minde make it lesse delightfome and imperfect, especially being accompanied (as it ever is) with cares and feares, whereby it doth not onely lessen, but growes not to be what it is taken to bee; where (on the contrary) the desire to continue or rather to goe onwards in prosperitie, augments our discontents; which infused into us by the imagination, spring up successively like ill weedes in a good soile, without either tillage or seede, thriving the better in the more tempestuous weather, and becomming perpetuall from season to season, bountifullly repaying the earth an hundred for one, manifesting thereby its being farre more liberall than just, and a better friend to it selfe than to other mens labours.

The *Princesse* astonished at her discourse, would faine egge her on a little further, for the better discovering among obscurities so palpable, the cleerenesse of an elevated capacitie; wherefore she

she said unto her ; The cause (sister mine) of our errour in beleeving that evill hath a greater stroke over us than good, proceeds from our owne passions, as you your selfe have confessed ; though in respect of themselves they bee of equall weight. The palat is more digested with the bitter than pleased with the sweete, though of its proper nature it love and affect the latter ; the reason is, because our senses make us more sensible of ill than good, which if wee consider rightly, we shall have no reason to complaine of nature, which made not contraries with proportion more contrary in the one than in the other. The blacke is no more blacke, than the white is white ; albeit the one is discerned better than the other, not for any defect of contrarietic, but by reason of the qualitie of the eye, that is more inclined to receive the impression of the one than of the other ; the Sunne (likewise) which for his brightnesse should bee more apt to bee scene, is neverthelesse (for a like reason) lesse scene. If then it bee so (as most assured it is) Why then comfort you not your selfe now that you are certaine of having passed the period of your evils, by the escaping of death, the extremest point of all misery ? So as necessarily your misfortune declining, it's malignitie in the recessse prepares for you in his change argument of consolation, and seeing that changes are no other than mutation of qualities, you ought to suppose that it must needs bee from bad to good.

Alas *Madame*, (answered the woman weeping) consider I pray you that reason and sense cannot be weighed with equall weights, because reason is either so fleeting, as she will not suffer us easily to lay hold on her, or else light and wavering, if shee chance to be formed by use or opinion. But the sense being weightie and of certaine consistence, remaines active, and deceives not, unlesse it selfe be beguiled by some alteration: well said you, that so should I doe, for indeede so would I faine doe ; but first make you these scales even (if you can) by giving mee either so much reason as sense, or else no more sense than reason, and then will I both obey you, and comfort my selfe. But (woe is me) it is their irreconcilable disparitie that makes my miserable estate inconsolable in that the practise of the Theoricke is in them too too different ; the one being more easie to an eloquent tongue, than the other to the stoutest heart, when it shall have occasion to put it in practise. Now as touching the excessse and period of my evils ; know (most noble Lady) that if men could content themselves with food onely, as doe the wilde beasts, then might the argument be good ; for you (of your commiseration) having freed me frō death, which was the period of evill ; (me thinks) reason tels me, that I am now in its recessse, for that the way of life is opened unto me : but too too miserable is our condition to bee contented to live onely, and to live to our selves alone ; there is none but knowes that we must live for others also, neither say I onely as he, who held that we are borne to our Countrey and friends, but I hereto adde that we are likewise borne to our owne affections, and

among them above all to honour, which subsisting of an unknowne and delicate element, receives its influence from the course of the more delicate spheares, which conjoynd to these materials, are in the point of their period diverse in qualitie, even as mine are; so as the recessse of ill in the one is the recessse of honour in the other: How then can one live in the recessse of ill, with the hope of the accessse of good, when the recessse of honor engenders the accessse of infamy, that stands in the opposite point? But to speak with your own principles, you (*Madame*) well know, that it is not one sole aspect that makes us become miserable, but our meeting afterwards with other new aspects in the way of their prog ressions, & the being of the maligne stars (which the learned call the Infortunate) of superior situation, and by consequence heavier and slower, which being in some sort intricated with the fixed, that are slowest of all, are never more disinvolved, but accompanie our few dayes with infinite evils; which being limited by death, and deprived of all power of hurting us in a life freed from their fetters, pursue us neverthelesse to our very graves, with an abominable and ignominious fame; which I say not because I beleeve it to be so indeede, but because that who so gives those principles credit will be induced to beleeve no otherwise. And I (for my part) cannot chuse but subscribe to the opinion of such as beleeve, that the fates and constellations are no other thing than the providence of the gods, whereunto if I now trusted not more than I doe to the celestiall figures, I should utterly despaire.

The *Princesse* (observing her to speake with much paine and great perplexitie of minde) thought it not good to trouble her any further, albeit she much desired to know both her, and the originall of her misfortunes, the rather because she well discerned in her ordinary signes of no ordinary person; leaving therefore *Aretia* to accompany her, she returned to the *Princes*, to whom she related what discourse she had with her, expressing her selfe to be gladder of this prize than of that of both the Fleets. They lodged themselves in *Terranova* as well as they could, where the sicke woman was carefully looked unto, and lodged as commodiously as the straightnesse of the place would permit, who by meanes, either of the Physitians, or of comfortable repose recovered together with her strength, her before exiled beauty.

Whilst the *Princesse* continued with the weake woman, the two brothers had time to conferre together, where *Metaneone* informed his brother of all that past betweene him and his father, and how he was by him sent to finde him out, whom therefore he once intended to have conducted homewards; but perceiving (as he thought) in that *Princesse* probable signes of an excessive love towards him, and considering withall how the tie of honour straightly obliged him to deferre his departure thence, till the warres were ended, he knew not what course he were best to resolve of; howbeit he held his owne returne necessarie, because he was to intreate his father to demand for him a wife (and there related he unto his brother all the story of

Eromilia)

Eromilia) yet knew he not well how he could go home without him. And that on the other side in procuring him to returne with him, he should doe very ill, for that he might thereby marre his fortune, and hinder his advancement, which hee ought rather by all meanes to further and procure, not onely for the gaining him such and so great a *Princesse*, but also for that when himselfe had obtained *Eromilia*, they might betweene them make (as it were) but one state of *Mauritania*, *Sardegna* and *Maiorica*, and so become awed of all their bordering neighbours.

Here the *Count* of *Bona* (perceiving the *Princesse* comming) interrupted their discourse; and as soone as they came a-shore, counselled them both to abide in *Sardegna*, undertaking to be himselfe the Ambassadour of their commissions, not doubting but that the King would be for that time contented to know that they loved one another; of whom he promised them to procure for the *Prince* an Embassage for *Maiorica*, and for the *Infante* troopes of aide for *Sardegna*, wherewith he might (for the furtherance of his marriage with *Eromena*) conquer the kingdome of *Corfica*, who also (now that he was knowne for a *Prince*) should in the meane time endeavour to bring his loves to a determined end. Of this proposition the *Prince* liked well, desiring it might bee suddenly put in execution; whereupon both of them wrote to their father conformably, as well of the friendship confirmed betweene them, as also of the reasons that constrained them to stay some-time in *Sardegna*, and withall of the neede they had of being favoured by his Majestie, in what should by the *Count* of *Bona* (to whom they wholly referred themselves) be manifested unto him more at large: to the same effect wrote they likewise to their mother, sisters, and brothers; telling afterwards the *Princesse*, that they, being resolved to serve her in those warres, thought good to acquaint therewith the King their father, to the end that he might not grieve, in that he saw them not returne homewards; whither they meant to send for that end the *Count* of *Bona*, whom they besought her Highnesse to honour with some command of hers, if such an occasion might any way proove serviceable unto her; for which the *Princesse* kindly thanked them, telling them withall that she herselfe would also write to the King, being bound to thanke him for the favours shee had at their hands received, which accordingly shee did with as lively a gratitude as by paper and inke could be exprest.

The *Count* went speedily aboard the Royall, and in two dayes he arrived in *Tunis*. The King seeing him come without the *Princes*, became thereat strangely amazed, but had no sooner understood the occasion of their stay, and perused their letters, than he was therewith fully satisfied, and exceedingly comforted. Those two businesses were proposed to the Kings Councell, where the *Count* of *Bona* shewed the utilitie of matching the *Prince* in *Maiorica* to be so evident (especially comprehending the other of *Sardegna* of him held for assured) that no man opposed the conclusion thereof; yet

stirred he not from *Tunis* till such time as there were eight thousand foote, and two thousand horse ready levied for *Polimero*. And for *Metaneone*, it was the Kings pleasure, that the same Count (as soone as hee had disembarked his forces) should goe treat of the match with *Maiorica*, giving him for adjutants three of his fellow-peeres, to the end that the embassage might be the more solemnly performed.

Eromena in the meane while, lived now at her owne hearts sweet content, having not onely fortunately vanquished her enemies, and ended so dangerous a warre, but come also to know *Polimero* for the sonne of so great a King, as his condition could not give the people any occasion of murmuring, and therefore meant shee (as soone as the state were well appeased and fully settled) without any further delay to returne to *Caleri* & marry him; from which although the death of her brother (as yet fresh in her memory) did in some sort dissuade her; neverthelesse when shee considered with her selfe how incapable of government her father was, she was perswaded that the world would commend her, for making choice of a *Prince* of such exquisite conditions and knowne valour; the onely obstacle indeede was his somewhat too greene youth, for which she doubted some would grumble at her, the rather because the disequalitie of yeares (she being at least by six yeares his elder) made the difficultie the greater; but love (suppressing all such considerations) made all these skores even: so as she (having sent for *Polimero*) told him that shee had not as yet rejoyced with him, according unto her minde; for having obtained her so long wished for desire of knowing him, nor expressed (as she ought) how sorry she was, that he had not made himselfe knowne unto her sooner. But hee on the other side endeavored to excuse himselfe with many reasons, among which some were, that he being desirous to become worthy of her favours, thought it expedient to obtaine his intencion therein, rather by reall teates of armes, than by bare merit of bloud, being a condition hee was sure could never faile him; that he was bound to thanke the heavens, in that he saw till then all things succeed well, save onely one which he as yet wanted; and as shee thought to aske him what that might be; It is a thing (saide he) that I cannot expresse unto you in words; but if your Highnesse would vouchsafe but to looke into my heart, you might there see it protraied, which you shall there no sooner see than know it to be no other thing, than an ardent desire of being your servant till death: which as he said, his speech failed him, as he would have pronounced the last accents. Now *Metaneone* (knowing his youth too tender for the managing of a businesse of that nature and importance) had before hand lessoned him what he should say, wherein he following his instructions, thought himselfe afterwards to have made more ample manifestation of his courage, than if he had fought alone against all the world.

Eromena, being glad he had thus begun to breake the ice, returned him this answer; My Princely Lord, I understand not well what you would

would say, being that you are too great a *Prince* for my service, for well see you how I am served by no other than simple Knights; and the services I have received of you, are indeed no services but favours, which rather binde me to be your servant, for the obligations I therefore owe you; and for me to looke into your heart, alas, how can I possibly doe it without your prejudice, which I would not doe, although it were to save my owne life. It is true, that a Painter might in your hearts portrayture place my Picture, and so might I by that means come to see it without harming you: doe but tell me then (I pray you) how was it that he did it, and who he is, and I will be his scholler.

Polimero, waxen by this time somewhat bolder, replied; Right excellent Lady, your Highnesse ought not refuse my service, because I am a *Prince*, but should accept of me the rather for being such an one; and for the Painter you neede seeke no further than your Royall selfe, because your Highnesse is both the Painter, and Portraiture; who if you had the power and skill to portray your selfe in my brest, may more easily behold there the excellency of your Pencill, which is so farre from harming me, as it is the onely restorative that can prolong my life.

Here as hee would have spoken further, his speech failed him, so as waxen more vermilion than the freshest rose, and kneeling on the ground he affectionately kissed her hands, which she withdrew not, but was well content to suffer his warme breath to satiate it selfe with that (to him) more than an Ambrosian banquet: Well (said shee) my Lord *Polimero*, what if I should see my selfe in your heart, could you then finde in your heart to see your selfe in mine? Whereto he (without letting her hands goe) replied; But how dare I (peerlesse Lady) without infinite presumption deeme my selfe such a Painter, as to place my unworthy picture in so worthy a Table, wherein if I were favoured with one sole thought of yours, I should thinke my selfe the happiest Knight that ever was borne a mortall? You are (said she) indeede no Painter, nor have I any picture of you, or your making; yet well know I you for a perfect sculptor, for here have you carved your lively statue, breathing as you see it; which said, she (holding before him a looking-glasse) proceeded, Whether of us now is the best Artificer? I, that onely placed in you my lifelesse Picture; or you that have graven and carved in mee your sculpture with its compleate parts and lineaments, accompanied with all the lively organs and living powers of the intellect? If so it be (answered the overjoyed *Polimero*,) I aske then no other boone of the immortall gods; but having never knowne my selfe for such a one as could accomplish so notable a piece of workmanship, for which I shall be all my lifes time obliged to my selfe, I am constrained (because the word of so great a *Princesse*, cannot tully satisfie my believe herein) to beseech your Highnesse to favour mee with some authentique assurance, by whose vertue this statue may abide in this place, secured by an irrevocable title, conformable to the

the lawes of the world, as I assure my selfe it is already according to the lawes of love.

The *Princesse* hereat passionately inflamed, leaving him nevertheless in his kneeling posture, and taking him with her armes gently about the necke, thus replied; (My deere Lord) to the end you may be fully assured, that I will bee yours according to the rites of the world, as I am already yours by the power of love, for irrevocable assurance of the one and the other, I give you this earnest: and with that (kissing him) spake on; Now see whether such an assurance can by one of my qualitie be ever either revoked or denied. Whereupon hee drawn on with so sweete a baite, would faine become somewhat bolder, but wanted the boldnesse to venture, so checkt was his forwardnesse with the curbe of bashfulnesse, till afterwards his being assured encreased his courage in so modest a way, that holding on a meane path betweene excesse and defect, he needed not any more, either bit or spur. The combat was of kisses, wherein fortune shewed her selfe indifferent, there being no one kisse lent, that was not as amorously repaid; till at length for feare of being discovered, though neither weary nor satiated, they sate them downe, where (banishing all coynesse and love-hating respects) now and then reciprocally interchanging sweete embraces, they recounted each to other their intended designs. *Eromena* well approving of his sending to *Mauritania* for fresh troopes, together with his designe of *Corfica*, whereon her minde (distracted with amorous thoughts) neere fastened, and now thought she it fit, that he under-went that enterprise, that so that kingdome being by him incorporated to the kingdome of *Sardegna*, might make their nuptials more approveable and better lik'd of, hee having no other thing to endow her withall. Vpon this shee would needs the day following, have her Councell summoned to sit, whereunto, having invited the two *Princes*, she proposed the state of the warre to be considered in its future limits.

The proposition was, whether it were their best course (now they had the *Corfan* King prisoner) to hold the enterprise as accomplished, and so license their souldiers or no? and if no, then to resolve of what they were best to doe? Some held it fitting that the warres should so rest determined; others were on the other side of a contrary opinion. Whereupon *Metaneone* being requested to deliver his opinion, excused himselfe by alleaging that being but so lately arrived there, he was unacquainted both with the countrey, and interesses thereof, and therefore referr'd himselfe unto his brother, who (having served the state) could not chuse but have a more exact knowledge of its condition. *Polimero*, being thereunto earnestly importuned, at last delivered himselfe in this sort.

If State-affaires (Soveraigne *Princesse*) carried with them no other consideration than that of the present, I should hold for vaine any other opinion, than that of peace, and should thinke the best course were to lay armes aside, and enjoy the fruit of conquest
archieved

atchieved by the valourous arme of your Highnesse, but considering them not as the short dayes of men, but according to their lasting perpetuitie, a prudent *Prince* ought to square our, and settle his government in such a manner as the same may last, not for his life onely, but even as long as the world can endure; It is true, your Highnesse hath already freed this kingdome from the cruellest Rebellion that ever was raised against any *Prince*, and withall taken prisoner that King, who (to become Tyrant here) so inhumanely nourished it; but this can suffice but for the present, what should follow is to prevent future dangers, which cannot bee otherwise effected than by measuring the kingdome of *Corfica* with the same measure wherewith its King would have measured this of *Sardigna*; the former being so neere a borderer to the latter, as they almost joyne, and by the ill which that hath, and would have done: to this may be comprehended the danger of the evill it may doe hereafter; I grant that your Highnesse hath for this once beene so fortunate as to suppress him; yet is not *Sardigna* sure to have alwayes the same conduct, prowes and fortune. The good husbandman beleeves not, he hath sufficiently rid his land of noysome weeds, by cropping their leaves onely, unlesse he also plucke them up by the rootes, ere they fall to seede a-new. So should your Highnesse also advance your victorious banners in the kingdome of *Corfica*, which once subdued, you may unite to this crowne, which untill you doe, the warres may well be ended in opinion, but never in effect; for *Corfica* having now lost its King may chuse it selfe another, and so either of it selfe, or by the helpe of other *Princes* make perpetuall incursions into this kingdome, which that they will attempt, I am the rather induced to beleeve, because the humor of those people is naturally revengefull, especially now that there is not a house among them that hath not felt heavy losses by this warre, and the fugitive Rebels, nestling themselves in the *Basilica*, may thence get themselves easily settled in their ancient patrimonies, their treason and offence not sufficing to make them so odious as not to finde some favourers of their actions among those they have commanded and swayed over these foure hundred yeares: and *Corfica* being a poore countrey, the inhabitants thereof for being needy will come shift for their living to *Sardigna*, where under the pretext of forragers they will maintaine a warre so lasting, as no valour shall bee able to destroy them, so well fortified will they bee found by the advantage of hils, and strongly barricadoed by the strength of woods, as there will bee somewhat to doe to finde them out, but much more to come to fight with them. But if your Highnesse would be pleased to resolve of the contrary, you shall avoide all these inconveniences, neither shall you find any considerable opposition, for that you shall invade a kingdome, that ownes neither King, Captaine, nor souldiers, and shall withall find it deprived (for ought I beleeve) of Galleyes, armes and Councell, now that all the best of them lie slaine in these wars. And though forraine *Princes* would endeavour to succour it,

yet should they finde it lost and won ere they came, so as such an enterprise cannot indeede any way redound to their good, or honour, who have neither interest nor reason to succour such as cannot but be utterly forlorne. Now some one may object, that to suppose that no neighbouring *Princes* can lay any claime thereto, is false. Well, I grant it, but let us (I pray them) argue who such may bee, for I see but onely five that may justly be reckoned in this number; three whereof also I will immediatly exclude. The first shall be the King my father, I will not say for my sake, for that every one will scarce beleve, seeing that *Princes* square out their actions by the rule of their own ends, but because he never aimed at the command of the sea, neither can the greatnesse of *Sardegna* breed in him any jealousie; considering that looke what difficulties stranger *Princes* shall have in enjoying it, the selfe same difficultie shall she have also in possessing the Dominions of others, especially in the firme land: for the same reasons, I exclude for the second man the *Etrurian* King; though not the King of *Maiorica*, who is the third; but because his forces are not such as neede be feared; there remaine yet the King of *Sicily* and *Ligurie*: this last may not doe it, because the *Taskan* King his neighbour will not suffer him to over-grow him in greatnesse, so as if hee should strive to possesse some others territories, the other would not let slippe the occasion of seazing on his. And if the *Sicilian* King doe but asmuch as aime thereat, hee must necessarily make enemies of the *Mauritanian*, *Ligurian*, and *Etrurian* Kings, besides such others as command the other side the *Faro*, if he but offer to joyne new kingdoms to his own, who (besides his being rich and potent) is sufficiently well seated to put all the rest in a jealousie of him. But let it be granted that any of them (excepting the King my father, for whom I offer my selfe an hostage) would be easily tempted to take up armes, yet let any such whosoever hee be but ballance, the certaine charge, that must be necessarily disbursed, with the uncertaine benefit, that may perhaps be reaped therefrom, and he shall see that as it cannot be compassed with a few men, so the transportation of great forces, will require great Fleets, which cannot be rigg'd under a great deale of time, which though they could suddenly provide, yet shall they meete with many other difficulties in being (for want of convenient havens) compeld in the selfesame time, to fight against the winde, sea and us. I omit the consideration of what the blindest see, which is, That *Sardegna* shall be rid of its bad neighbours, and shall by commanding in stead of awing them, become glorious and dreaded of all such as would either harme or infest it; I overpasse also such consequences as might be deduced from the augmentation of forces, territories and revenewes, considering the commodiousnesse of its situation. Other considerable difficulties I beleve there are none, whereof though there were, yet can I not thinke them to be such as may be paragonized with the different state of these two kingdoms, besides no difficulties should ever hinder the performace of necessary resolutions. But now because it is

no policy to credit the Counsel of such as share not of the perils that may chance to spring from the roote of such advise, I here profferre your Highnesse to participate thereof, not only with my person, but also with such troopes as shall be thought requisite for that imployment, which I hope to obtaine of the King my father, and of the Prince my brother here present, so your Highnesse will but vouchsafe to accept of them.

The *Princesse*, that with great pleasure had all this while listned unto him, kindly thanked him for his proffer, as though it had beene a thing strange unto her. And because she well perceived that the matter when it came to be resolved of among the Councell, would not prove so plaine, but that it might meete with some oppositions, by reason of such jealousies as might arise from the proffer, therefore gave shee order that they should among themselves treat thereof.

The *Marquesse of Orislagno*, who ever sithence *Polimero* was knowne for a *Prince*, began to ghesse at the cause of his comming to *Sardegna*, as he had also before that taken notice of the inclination of the *Princesse*, deeming that love of hers to be well employed, since that (if shee married at all, she could not make choise of either a fitter or worthier husband) resolved to set forwards, and bring to head that businesse, being well assured he should thereby both please the *Princesse*, and doe the state good service; therefore opposed he openly such as held the *Infante of Mauritania's* proposition dangerous (inter-ring for an example the Trojan horse for a caveat to feare and mistrust both the gift and giver.) His reasons were, that it was not to bee doubted, that he who so had begunne to merit, would not continue so to doe, aswell for desire of glory, as for hope of reward, hee being the last of the sonnes of *Mauritania*, and therefore without meanes: that in case he harboured any evill intention, his forces could not stead him much, for that theirs would be more than thrice so many; and that sithence they might without losse of their owne men gaine themselves a kingdome (to them so commodious and necessary) he held it a great folly to refuse it. Many other things toucht he by the way, whereby the most acute smelt out his drift, wherewith they were so farre from being displeased, as all of them without any opposition, willingly concurr'd in the selfesame opinion. Wherof the *Princesse* was a glad woman, who having therewith acquainted *Polimero*, caused both him and his brother, to be cald in to the Councell, as though she had told him nothing thereof; where (having extolled his noble exploits in the wars, taking occasion to fall in speech of his last proffer) she told him; That although the Councell was somewhat loth to make use of the kingdome of *Mauritania*, yet notwithstanding, that in respect of the knowne good correspondencie ever held betweene that and the *Sardegna* crowne, it had now resolved to accept of the troopes by him offered, to the end that hee might with them and those of *Sardegna* proceede in his *Corfan* enterprize, as hee had proposed. Then turning her

selfe towards *Metaneone* (when she had made a great *Encomio* on the Flecte, won her by his meanes) shee confest, that the King her father, her selfe, and the whole kingdome, were exceedingly obliged to the one, and the other; for which all of them together would be ready at all occasions to serve them, the King their father, and kingdome: whereunto the brothers having answered each for himselfe, gave in courteous termes such assurance of their good intentions, there was not any that doubted of their sinceritie.

The *Princesse* had already posted a Currier to advertize the King her father of the victories, and now determined shee to send him the Councels resolution, and withall the King *Epicamedo* with the other prisoners; much had he desired to see the *Princesse*, whereto shee would by no meanes condescend, pretending to detaine him not as a prisoner of warre, but as a Traitor, guilty of injured Majestie, because her brothers murtherers had never attempted to take away his life, had they not beene back't by him; so as he indeede was the author of that murther, those warres, and all other ils that thence proceeded.

Many dayes staid the *Princesse* in *Terranova*, expecting the coming of the rest of the army from *Villapetres*, to march thence onwards to the next countrey of *Luogodori*, which lies in the utmost point of *Sardegna* in the sight of *Corfica*, to the end she might assure her selfe of those countries formerly possessed by the Rebels, and might also thence with more conveniency (at the arrivall thither of the *Mauritanian* troopes) transport them over into *Corfica*.

Aretia in the meane time had used all possible diligence to restore to her former being, the weake woman, whom they had saved from the mercilesse sea, which for her bodily plight was not very difficult, but for the state of her minde, seemed a thing impossible, in that she found her weaker every day than other, and (as it were) repenting that she died not. The *Princesse* now disentangled of publike affaires, and desirous to know who shee was, went in person to visite her, who having by this time understood that this was the famous *Princesse Eromena*, received her with profound humilitie, by the Physicians direction shee kept as yet her bed, though much against her will; where the *Princesse*, sitting downe by her, joyed much to see her a living woman, hoping that as she had already gotten this point, so shee might in time also come to gaine the other, which was to bring her to some degrees of comfort by entertaining her with mirth and pleasant company: wherein shee was neverthelesse very much deceived, because a refined melancholy, having first beene an infirmitie of the minde, and then come to be a bodily disease, and so growne to be a residence of different substance is wont to prove (for the most part) mortall and incurable. I had come sooner unto you (said the *Princesse*) but that I thought good to give you first time to recollect your spirits, and yet wot I not well how I ought to entertaine you, because the outward expressions of your fortune shew you to be otherwise than your proper conditions discover you

to

to be. I beseech you to cleare me of that doubt, assuring you on the faith of a noble maiden, that the curiositie to know it, tends to no other end than to assist you, which I will doe without sparing any thing I have. Here is no body present but *Aretia*, for whose secrecie I undertake as for my selfe.

The woman (standing awhile in a muse, without making any answer) fetching at length a deepe sigh, not without teares, said unto her;

Royall *Princesse*, your requests are commands to me; and although to satisfie your Highnesse therein, bee but as it were to draw fresh bloud out of greene wounds, and to fester an old long fithence inulcerated sore, yet can I for all that doe no lesse than obey you.

My name is *Eleina*, my Nation, the *Narbon Gaule*, my Countrey, *Arelate*; where my father is he that beares both Crowne and Scepter. My mother was the daughter of the *Celtan* King; know her did I never, because she (presaging my misfortunes) lest she should see so unhappy a burthen, died in childbirth of me. With such quaint tenderneffe was I bred up, as children of my birth and qualitie are wont to be, but much more fondly; for being the only child of my father, who (although a Widdower at foure and twentie yeares of age) would never condescend to marry againe, for all that his subjects earnestly besought him thereto, so much overswayed him, the exceeding great love he bare to my mother, for whose sake he also tendered me the dearer; for the fuller expression whereof, he grew more obstinate in his intended resolution, so as I was esteemed and honoured of the world, as undoubted heire of that kingdome. My childhood spent I in many noble disciplines; for being borne to a Crowne, I was educated not as a woman, but as a Sovereigne *Prince*: and withall to make my present state more fully miserable with the memorie of passed glories, the Knights errant deemed themselves not worthy of the seeking adventures, ere they had first had the adventure of seeing me, which came to passe, either because things a far off had a greater priveledge of opinion, than things more at hand; or because there was in me some esteeme-worthy thing which I knew not my selfe; suffice it, that such was the effect, whether the cause deserv'd it or no. Being arrived to sixteene yeares of age, such was my misfortune, that there came to *Arelate* as a Knight errant, the son of the King of *Catalogna*, whose name was *Don Peplasos*. This *Prince* making a shew of being enamored of me, speake, and wrought so far, as I (drawne on rather by my destinie, than by any love I bare him) perswaded my father to give me him for wife; which he did, (being not used to contradict me) though sore against his will, and with the teares in his eyes protesting he did it meerely to satisfie me, himselfe for his owne particular, liking not well of such hasty weddings, and much lesse of the bridegroome. But I, over-tired with the great number of Suitors, without knowing which of them to chuse, (detained in this ignorance by the tenderneffe of age, but much

more by my simplicitie in not knowing what manner of thing love was, wearied with the trouble of being so wooed, and foolishly curious to see my selfe a wife) made choice of him, to verifie that old Proverbe, *Women ever chuse the worst*. With him lived I seven yeares without bearing children, which scene by my fathers subjects, who would by no meanes bee commanded by the *Catalonian* nation (abhorred by them by a naturall antipathy) and much lesse by him, whom for his bad usage to me-wards, they hated more than death it selfe, they earnestly besought my father to marry, so that at last he, won by their importunities, but much more by my letters, tooke to wife a faire and vertuous *Princesse*, the King of *Aquitain's* daughter, who bare him the very first yeare a male child, which as much contented the people, as it madded and discontented my husband, who seeing himself deprived both of that kingdome, and also of any hope of having by me any children, determined to avenge the one, and remedy the other, by doing away my person.

It fell out in the meane time, that fame extolling abroad the two neighbouring beauties, which were yours, and that of *Eromilia*, (*Princesse of Maiorica*) hee (being the vainest man living) not knowing which of both to chuse, was much tormented in minde, for being indifferently enamored, as well of the one as of the other; but considering yours, without possessions and dominions (the principal object of his love) during the life time of your brother, that onely mirror of *Princes*, and withall fearing you for the fame of your valour, which would not (as he thought) willingly brooke ill usage, he bent his inclination towards the *Princesse of Maiorica*, from whom he withdrew it againe, when he understood of her being promised to your brother, which occasioned not the taking away of my misfortunes, but the differring of them for my greater evill.

Now *Don Peplasos* lov'd a gentle Knight, if he may be said to love, to whom nature gave no inclination to love other than himself, besides the being of his nature, disposition, and conditions, so farre alienated from those of *Don Eleimo* (for so was the Knight named) that it seemed impossible to forme thereof a true friendship; but as every rule is wont to have, (so hath this also) its exception, at least on the behalfe of the *Prince*, who being presumptuous, and so farre deceived in himselfe as to repute his owne vices to be vertues, easily beleev'd, that *Don Eleimo* (a vertuous *Cavalier*) tooke them for such indeede; to him therefore discovered hee his inhumane designs: but he (which well knew his nature) although he durst not contradict him, yet was he so mov'd by the instinct of his owne vertue, as he could do no lesse than advertize me thereof. And because either to speake or write to me might prove dangerous, he onely wrote to me to finde out some one trusty, with whom he might conferre without any suspition.

The husband of my chiefe chamberlaine, named *Don Elavio*, was one of the best esteemed, and noblest of the *Catalonian* Knights, whose conditons when I had well examined, I judg'd him a man worthy

worthy of my secret. And he having comforted me, went to conferre with *Don Eulavio*, to whom he shewed the letter, which he had (as I told you) written unto me, according as we had first agreed on, to certifie him, that he was sent from me, and afterwards (burning it in his presence) used with him, on my behalfe, such courteous language, as might suite with an affaire of such importance. To whom *Don Eleimo* answered, that without the testimonie of the letter, himselfe alone was a sufficient letter of assurance and credit. And with that he told him, how that the *Prince*, having taken me to wife, not for affection sake (as he made me beleieve ere he married me) but for meere covetousnesse of the *Arelatan* kingdome, which not succeeding according to his expectation, (my father being married and having a sonne, and I prov'd a barren woman) was resolved to put me to death; but considering the good opinion which the people and his father also had of my honestie, he determined to worke his ends another way, and that was by poison, which he intended to put in practise ere long, having already so wrought with my Physitian, as he had got him to promise to make him some of purpose, which (for not being violent) should in the end of certaine dayes worke their effect, without giving any colour of suspicion. All which when I understood, I know not which was greater, either the hate I bore my husband for so barbarous a crueltie, or the feare I had of not being able to preserve my selfe; and having before my marriage beene very curious of simples, whereby I knew such as might more easily be used to hurt me, I prepared for my selfe such antidotes, as I hoped thereby to preserve my life, as it came indeede to passe; for I in using them, so prevented the danger, as I could not have poisoned my selfe, although I would. Yet was I not therein uncircumspect, for some of them I tooke (being assured by the antidotes) others would I not take, because I knew they were too strong, being forewarned of all of them, and of their qualities, by the good *Don Eleimo*; whereat the *Prince* wondering, after many fantasies and conjectures, (most subtile as he was) imagined that I was enformed thereof, but not thinking of *Don Eleimo*, he began to mistrust that the Physitian (moved either by pittie or avarice) had made me priuy thereto; but when he afterwards saw, both by his protestations and proceeding in the practise, that he proved as trusty to him as treacherous to me, he could not then chuse but suspect who it was indeede. And therefore he (intending now to kill two birds with one stone) forethought how to take *Don Eleimo* so napping, as he might punish him, not for the good he did me, but for the evill he might lay to his charge to have done with me, which he perhaps beleaved so to be, as one deeming it impossible that meere pietie and pittie (which he being never acquainted withall, himselfe beleaved to bee in no other man) had moved this Knight to doe me this good office; nor could he imagine that any other interesses induced him thereto, whom he well knew to be a noble and rich *Cavalier*, and my selfe so poorely entertained, as I had ordinarily little more allowed me than a private Lady.

Confirmed

Confirmed then in this article of beleefe, he, for many dayes, did nothing else but pry into our actions, though to no purpose, we being so farre from any such intention as imagination it selfe could not fancie us more alienated therefrom.

One had *Don Eliemo* among all his servants no lesse deare unto him, than himselfe was to the *Prince*; on him fixt *Don Peplases* his eye, judging him a fit instrument for his designes; and seeing him oftentimes in his fore-chamber, waiting for *Don Eleimo*, tooke occasion to call him, under colour of asking of him something, or bidding him doe some petty service, so as hee puffed up with such like favours, and already framing himselfe high fortunes, began to despise such meane preferments as might bee pretended from *Don Eleimo*; Nay, so great was his presumption, that thinking one day to unhorse his master himselfe out of the *Prince* his favour, he grew by this imagination, both to envie and hate him; so useth fortune to sport her selfe in humane things, as in a noble minde one generous act prevailes more than all wordly interestes; and on the contrary, in a base minde, one sole interest can doe more than all the ties of vertue, the one to save the innocent condemnes his Lords favour, and the other to obtaine it by betraying the guiltlesse, makes himselfe guilty. Now when the *Prince* thought hee had sufficiently prepared him, hee found one day opportunitie to speake unto him in this wise.

Catafopo, I purpose to receive thee into my service, but charge thee not to speake a word thereof to any man living, especially to *Don Eleimo*, from whom ere thou part, thou must (for a businesse that imports me) observe, whothose of my wives family be that frequent him most, and in this and every other action of his, penetrate the deepest thou canst possibly; wherein, if thou servest me well, I promise to make thy fortune such as thou shalt not neede envie thy Masters greatnesse.

Catafopo, who joyed not a little to become thus the *Princes* favorite, promised to serve him with all observant diligence, wherein he could already assure him, how *Don Eulavio* used to come often to visite him, and that (for the most part) by night, locking themselves in privately, both alone, very circumspect, that no man overheard them; and that one evening among the rest, when *Don Eulavio* was gone, *Don Eleimo* stood a long while looking on a Jewell, which the other had left him.

The *Prince* (thinking he had now gotten all that he desired) bade him in any case steale away that Jewell, which hee promised to doe, well knowing how to filch away the key of the study wherein it was laid up. This Jewell was my mothers, being a triangle of three rich diamonds, each angle whereof was enriched with a great pearle; I sent it him by *Don Eulavio* in token of gratitude, and he (as *Don Eulavio* told me) accepted it very unwillingly, his heart seeming to presage unto him his ensuing evils, seeing that he abhorring it as a thing mortiferous, praid him sundry times after he had received it,

to bring it me backe againe, which (I beleeve) he did, not that his imagination stucke in what his heart presaged him, but because he blemisht his nobilitie (as he thought) in doing mercenarily that action, which had no other end than it selfe. It was an easie matter for *Catascope* to satisfie the ill intended curiositie of the *Prince*, *Don Eleimo* concealing not himself from him, for that he deemed him to be as faithful a servant, as himselfe was an affectionate Master, so as he made a shift to steale away the key, and then filtching away the Jewell, brought it forthwith to the *Prince*, who (knowing it to be mine) looked after no other evidence, but condemning me unheard, would by no means let slip a season so opportune to his villanies: Being then risen out of his bed, & causing himself to be followed by those of his guard, he went towards *Don Eleimo's* house, that adjoynd to the Court, intending to surprize him there, but that the heavens permitted not, because having occasion to call to *Catascope* (who lay in his chamber) without receiving any answer, he was forced to rise himself, when not finding him there, whereat he was much amazed, til having sent for a candle, he perceived at the first sight, the studie doore open, and finding not therein the Jewell, he suddenly suspected the cause, wherefore the *Prince* favoured the Traytor. What to resolve of in that instant, hee knew not, seeing that to stay there was dangerous, and to get him gone would bee judged a signe of manifest guilt. Whilest thus his troubled minde enclined while to the one, and while to the other resolution, behold hee perceived through a window, (which by good fortune stood then open) a great glimmering of lights, and no small crowde of people; among whom were also the Archers of the Court; whereupon examining in his judgement (in the twinckling of an eye) the crueltie of the *Prince*, who was both head-strong and inexorable, he resolved to shun his owne ruine, as the lesser evill, reserving a place and time more proper, for the clearing of his innocency, which was mine by consequence; taking with him therefore some coine and Jewells from out his study (by the being there wherof he comprehended, that the robbetrie tended not to the filtching away of a Jewell, but to the murthuring of him in his life and honour) leaving unstirred his family (who little suspected any such accident) he slipped him out by a secret doore that leade to his lodgings, whilst the *Prince* caused the streete doore to be furiously beaten downe to the ground. The confusion of the poore servants which then lay in a deepe sleep, cannot be expressed, no more than the fury of the *Prince*, who because he found him not, tooke on him like a mad man; whilst those of his traine not beleeving that he could be fled away in so short a time, in causing him to be sought for all over the house, gave him the more time to save himselfe: who (being suffered to passe through the gate of the watch, not so much for giving them the militarie signe, as because they knew who he was) went aboard a Galley (feining some businesse for the *Prince*) wherewith he got himselfe to the King my father in *Arelata*. The *Prince* (in the meane time having sent all over) found out at length the way of his escape, when though he speeded all the

R

Galleyes

Galleyes after him sundrie wayes, and to diuerſe places; yet was it not poſſible for any of them to over-take him, becauſe hee having choſen the beſt Galley never ſuffered the Ghing to reſoſe their oares, till he arrived in *Aquamorta*.

Don Eleimo being thus eſcaped, there remained yet *Don Eulavio*. Now there ſerued *Don Eleimo* a ſlave given him by *Don Eulavio*, who (having beene well uſed by both, and ſeeing the miſfortune of the one) ranne inſtantly to the other, thinking it his beſt courſe to ſave himſelfe in the houſe of his firſt Maſter, ere the Officers ſeazed on him for a chattle with the goods of the ſecond. Now *Don Eulavio* uſed gaming very much, (and as fortune would have it) he then was at play, when ſeeing the ſlave appeare before him, he (riſing off the table with a great heart-beating) aſked him what he would have? And (having underſtood the cauſe, though not the occaſion) ſuſpecting what was indeede, and judging his ſtay to quit himſelfe thereof would prove dangerous, hee loding the ſlave with a ladder of cords (made in his youth for his ſtolen love-ſports) and taking his way towards a part of the citie, formerly perhaps obſerved by him for ſuch like occurrences, ſpeedily deſcended the walls, leaving there the ladder behinde, ſithence when, there was never any newes heard, either of him or the ſlave. The *Prince* thus fruſtrated of his firſt hope, came running to *Don Eulavio*'s houſe, which he found open, and replete with ſervants, waiting for their Maſters, that were there a gaming; but ſcouting on further, and detaining ſuch as would have runne in to give notice of his comming, he ſuddenly ruſhed in himſelfe among them; where every one ſtood up to honour him, and he (finding there miſſing *Don Eulavio*) enquired for him, after whom when every man had ſought and cald too, they perceived in the end, he was gone his wayes; which when *Don Peplaſos* underſtood, there was no man that durſt as much as looke on his fierie eyes, for hee laying aſide all gravitie, ſpake and did things unworthy a *Prince*; all the ſervants there ſent he packing to a cloſe priſon, as he had formerly done with *Don Eleimo*'s: neither were thoſe Knights whom hee found a gaming, any thing better uſed by him; whileſt I (wretched woman) lay (thankes to my quiet conſcience) deeply plunged in a profound ſleepe. Many yeares before ſlept I al'alone, the *Prince* never comming neere me, but at the requeſt of the King his father, which was ſeldome, and then with a demeanour rather irkeſome & diſguſtful, than any whit contentſome for the converſation of married folks, unleſſe it be in an affectionate way, is no pleaſure but a torment, and favours rather of beaſtiality than humanity. There ſlept alwayes two gentle-woman in my bed-chamber, where ſtood a ſmall lampe continually burning, becauſe my melancholy being growne to be a formall infirmitie, I ever found my ſelfe troubled with ſome indiſpoſſition, orther, either of ſtomacke or ſpleene, ſo as there paſſed not a night, wherein I needed not both remedies, and the company of ſome to comfort me; for my head was ſo replete with vapours, as I ſaw and ſuffered what another woman (how ill diſpoſed ſoever) could

could not have asmuch as imagined, much lesse scene and endured. With a great rumbling came the *Prince* rushing into my bed-chamber, by reason whereof my fit of sicknesse seizing on me; as soone as I understood the occasion of his comming thither, I swooned and fell in a convulsion, so extremely violent, as I was so fortunate as not to heare with mine owne eares those injurious termes which (I afterwards heard) he gave me. He would by all meanes have caused me so naked to be cast into the bottome of a dark dungeon, had not the king (who came running to see what this hurly-burly meant) hindred him to do it; who hearing him accuse me of adulterie with *Don Eleimo*, by the instrumentall means of *Don Eulavio*, told him, that the judgement thereof belonged to him as King, and therefore bade him get him to bed, telling him that what he had done was sufficient, assuring him withall, that as he would have me burnt, if he found me guiltie, so would he also allow my innocencie such favour as it merited; whereupon hee parting away (though much against his will) the King would not as yet leave me, but patiently attending to see the end of my fit, and conferring in the meane time, while with the one, and while with the other of my gentle women, he well perceived the *Prince* his suspicion to bee either vaine or malicious. Returned to my selfe (if so I may say that found my selfe then in a worse plight than ever) the King drew neere mee, consoling mee exceeding courteously; and having first suffered me to vent out my teares, for the disburdning of my heart, hee then told me; that albeit he never had occasion in so many yeares, to suspect my honesty; neverthelesse, being that the gods had given him the Scepter of Iustice, he could doe no lesse than heare such as accused me, to the end he might the better heare me also. And that if I knew my selfe innocent, hee saw no cause I had to grieve, seeing that I might assure my selfe that no tie of affection should prevaile with him so farre, as to suffer me to be wronged. I (that felt my selfe stricke through the heart by so dishonest an injurie) assured by my conscience, answered him, that the not condemning me, obliged me never awhit, because finding me guiltlesse (as most certainly he should) he was obliged to publish me innocent; but that (to free me from the evill opinion of the world, wherein I was false by this imputation) lay not at his dispose, unlesse he would be pleased to preferre the rites of justice before all respects of bloud, by judging my malicious accusers by the strictnesse of the *Talion* law. The King stricken inwardly with my words, stood awhile in a maze, and afterwards (bidding mee good night) retired to his lodging, leaving with me a guard, with expresse order, not to suffer the *Prince* to enter my chamber.

The day following, the fame of this accident was rumored abroad, not onely through the Citie, but also over all the kingdome, with such discontent of the people, murmuring in so open a manner, against the person of the *Prince*, as made him (being no lesse timorous than cruell) ready to goe besides himselfe; neither was

there any Market-place, Temple, or Common-walke, where there was not punctuall scrutinie made of my life, and behaviour, followed by a generall judgement on my behalfe every way favourable. And in truth, though I had harboured a dishonest intention (which was (God knowes) farre from my thoughts) yet was it impossible for me to have ever put the same in practise, being that I went no where unaccompanied, nor staid I ever by night or day in my owne chamber all alone, neither (which is more) favoured or affected I ever any one of my women more than the rest, but esteemed them all equally alike, bearing no other different respect towards them, than might serve to manifest my better liking, to such of them as I found more diligent in my service, so as it was impossible for me to be accused by other than malice it selfe, which neverthelesse by the afore-said meanes could not possibly prejudice me, because it could no way alleage time or place; although (by its mischievous malignitie) it could devise how to alleage perions.

The day following the King would faine know of his sonne the cause of my accusation, who related unto him all that he gathered out of *Catascope*, with the contumacie, and suspicious flight of the two Knights whereof he formed a consequence of my offence. And then examining *Catascope* (who conformed himselfe in all things to the Prince his allegation without varying in any thing) it hapned that the accusation (though most false) seemed somewhat likely to bee true. Whereupon the King (misinformed) came to me, and explained all that was laid to my charge, opening unto me by his propositions a large field to cleare my innocency, which I manifested unto him so apparently lively, as any man but he, would have instantly absolved me, and condemned the Prince. But alas, *No man ever hated his owne flesh*, so as it was no marvaile, if his fatherly inclination, hindred him to discern the malice of his sonne; he would not beleeve that they went about to poison me, because the Physitian denied it, for which I (having no other testimony than the two Knights that were fled and gone) alleaged my distillations, and some words carelessly let slippe from mee, whereby my women discovered in mee such like suspicions. I denied not the gift of the Jewell, though for the occasion I told you, further alleaging, that *Don Eulavio* being (as every one knew) a noble Knight, it was not a thing credible that either I should use him for a Pander, or that he would have beene so base as to suffer himselfe to become such a one: but seeing the King for all this stick firm to the evidence of his sonne (which was the gift of the Jewell, and flight of the Knights,) I shewed him how the gift had its occasion, and much more the flight of the Knights, that had beene verie wilfully sottish to have trusted themselves to the discretion of an unjust and cruell Prince, who if he made no conscience to procure my death, for being excluded of his hopes of the *Arelatan* kingdom, and for the aspiring to that of *Majorica*, much lesse would he have made, to put them to death, to the end he might thereby, not onely revenge himselfe, and suppress the discoverie

discoverie of his mischievous practises, but also rid himselfe of me for ever, at the price of my life and honour. In the end I besought him that my Physitian might be examined by torture, wherof he was well contented; but hee the very day before he was to be examined, was found strangled, to make the world beleieve that he hanged himselfe for feare of torments. My reasons (in summe) had availed mee little, if (in lesse than eight dayes after this accident) there had not appeared an Ambassadour from my father come scowring with maine force of oares, on a well rigged Galley, who having presented the King with a letter of credence, and acquainted him with the occasion of his comming, delivered him also a letter from *Don Eleimo*, containing the whole story of my case, without varying a haire's breadth from what I had formerly related. And (because the Embassadour suddenly upon his arrivall, would needs have audience, ere he spake with me or any other) he praied, as soone as the King had read the letter, that he might see me, to confront therewith my deposition; which could not be denied him; and finding me in a plight so deplorable, he comforted me, with assuring me, that my fathers tendernesse of affection to me-wards, was no lesse now than when I was his only child; and that when he were assured of my honesty, he was resolved to defend it, though it should cost him his life and kingdome, that he was sent thither to be an assistant at my arraignment, which he would have prosecuted with all rigor, that so my innocency might be the better cleared, that the maine prooffe consisted of one sole point, which was, to see if what I said, was conformable to what *Don Eleimo* had told my father, and now written to the King of *Catalagna* there present. Much was I comforted in hearing this, and after, having asked him how my father did, I related unto him (as formerly I had done to my father-in-law) the advertizements many times given me by *Don Eleimo*, with the severall antidotes by mee taken, whereof I shewed them the receipts, wishing them to aske the Physitians, if such were effectually against poisons. I made known unto them in the end how it grieved me, that my Physitian was hanged up in prison, for feare lest he discovered (on the racke) both his own and the *Prince* his treacherie. Which when the Embassadour heard, he asked the King what he thought of it? Whereto hee not knowing what to answer, (reading againe *Don Eleimo's* letter, with strange mutation of colours) said, he would goe conferre with his sonne: to whom, when he had shewed the letter, and made with him a great stirre about it, he at length resolved to have all things hushed up, wherewith I not contenting my selfe (but requiring the death of the false *Catafco*, with some publike declaration of the *Prince*, for the manifestation of my innocency) could by no meanes possible obtaine, either the one or the other, for *Catafco*, disclaimed from having ever named me, maintaining all hee averr'd to be true without any prejudice to me; and the *Prince*, by alleaging love to be a thing full of doubts and feares, not onely excluded himselfe from the obligation of giving me such satisfaction,

as I looked for, but also pretended to have withall obliged me, in having so basely defamed me. I would faine have returned home to my fathers, but entreated by my father-in-law, deceived by the false penitencie of my husband, and counselled by the Embassadour not to doe it (being that my husband could no waies make a more publike declaration of my wronged honestie, than to keepe mee with him) I was perswaded to stay; whereof I soone repented me, now that a justly conceived disdain had taken away from mee all the residue of love; and that there appeared to increase in him a desire to free himselfe of the knowne ill opinion that every one conceived of him, imagining my life to be unto him a perpetuall upbraiding of his infamie.

It fortun'd that a yeare and somewhat after that these things succeeded, the valourous *Prince*, your brother, was slaine, whereupon a new phrensie being come into his head of getting the *Princesse Eromilia* (a thing which could not be whilst I lived) he resolved to make me away; but not knowing what colour to have for it, now that my honestie was so openly knowne, he thought of a thousand wayes, whereof no one liked him; at last hee lighted on one, the most villanous that ever humane wit could imagine.

Now there stood seated on the *Pirenean* mountaines, a Temple dedicated to the goddess *Iuno*; whither such married paires, as had lived disgusted, came from remote parts on pilgrimage, to pray the goddess to grant them reciprocall love and concord. *Don Peplafos* (in whom was never before seene any signe, either of pietie, or religion, become now forsooth in an instant devoutly religious) invited me to this pilgrimage, whereof I (that much needed celestiall helpe) was (God knowes) exceeding joyfull. Me-thought that my prayers were already heard, and that I saw my husband become an altered man, for that the desire to be good (which he seemed now to have) argued in him a beginning of goodnesse. Nothing would he resolve of without me, touching this journey, participating of my advice, as well for the manner thereof, as for the company we were to take along with us; wherein (he seeming to be exceedingly mortified and full of contrition) we resolved to goe disguised, without any manner of pompe; taking with us but one servant a-piece: but because I thought I could not (for modesties cause) be so conveniently served in my occasions by a man servant, I told him that in stead of a man, I would take along with me a waiting-woman, he (telling me that it was fitting I should so doe) replied; that to prevent future accidents, I should doe well to take along with me also a man-servant, for that wee knew not what dangers might befall us by the way, and that therefore it were not amisse, to chuse out such a one as I knew for a man of valour, whereunto I very willingly condescended, and being by this proposition quite cleared of all suspition that might have sticke in my minde; albeit, so simple was I, as that I never once doubted of any thing; I selected me one, whose name was *Calaplo*, a harmelesse and comely young fellow, though never till then knowne

knowne to me for a man any way valiant; and now my minde settled on no other thing than my journey, having cloathed our selves in pilgrimes weedes of course gray cloth, we set our selves forwards on our journey: whither hee offered not to take along with him *Catasco*, to shew how unwilling hee was to displease me; albeit though hee had brought him along with him, I would never have disliked it, having before resolved with my selfe to forget whatsoever was past; in his stead tooke he a right noble and valiant Knight, and such a one, as I cannot beleve that he knew any thing from this treacherous plot, but rather that the *Prince* tooke him with him of purpose, that his deceived goodnesse might deceive others. Come to the Temple, wee adored the goddesse, and presented her with rich gifts, whereat I beleved, she smiled to see them come from two hearts, the one a Traytor, the other betraied. I (full of religious faith) continued all the day in the Temple praying, not without feeling a very great commotion of feare in my minde, though I saw no reason why, and therefore imputing the fault to my infirmitie, I fervently besought the goddesse to comfort me. In the meane time my good husband (whilst the Knight was at our lodging, which was very farre off, left behind there of purpose, under colour of keeping companie with my woman, who was somewhat ill at ease) sent my man to fetch him a little wallet, which (having given him the key thereof) he made him open, shewing him a good quantitie of Jewels and gold (as indeede there was nothing else therein;) then causing him to put all in again, and locke it up fast, he said unto him; Here take this wallet, and get thee gone suddenly into some countrey, so farre off, as it may not bee knowne that thou art living in the world, for if ever I come to know it, I vow thou shalt not live one houre after. The yong man (hereat much amazed, taking the wallet) went his way without any more adoe. And he comming hastily into the temple, invited me to goe see a white Doo on these mountaines, whereat I smiled that he tooke it for a Doo, where it was more likely some kinde of Chamoy or Wilde-goate; but he obstinately persisting in affirming it to be a Doo, I gathered up my selfe to follow him. And because my Physitians had told me, that exercise was good against my infirmitie; it was no difficult matter for him (we having not as yet gotten any sight of the Doo) to get me to descend through places so rugged and craggy, as it was impossible for me to returne thence backe againe. But he telling me he had the day before gone the same way, and that a little further was a very faire path, whither we were necessarily to goe, to returne backe againe; I then (though too late) perceived my selfe deceived; wherefore (bursting out a weeping) I besought him to have compassion of me. But he (waxen by this time cruell, and growing more and more savage) made mee trot so long, till seized on by one of my wonted fits I fell downe deprived of all sense or feeling. What become of him I know not; for it was darke night ere I came to my selfe; when I found I was gotten into a steepe and rockie dale, a long dayes journey distant from

from the place where I swooned. How I was carried thither, I know not, much lesse how I came to bee left bare-foote and bare-legged, and stripped naked of all save onely this gowne of my unhappie pilgrimage; and certainly I would have chosen rather to have died a thousand deaths, than to have beene left in such a plight, for my tender feete could not endure the sharpnesse of the stones, neither (which was worse) knew I which way to goe, assuring my selfe, that to returne backe againe, was impossible for mee, so as putting my selfe into the hands of fortune, I made choise to descend the lesse difficult way, going for the most part on all foure, and sharing among my knees, legges, and hands, the paines which my feete alone were not able to suffer. But come at last to the foote of one mountaine, where began the ascent of another, without having seene all the day long any living creature, lifting up my eyes by chance, whom might I see but my servant *Calaplo*, who beheld me, but knew me not, so great was his astonishment to see me trudge in such a fashion; till constrained by my wearinesse to sit me downe, he came to know me by the pitious moane I made; whereupon hee (with a voice somewhat loud) thus said unto me;

And is it possible that you are my Lady the *Princesse*? Alas, what cruell destinie could make any man become so barbarous as to put you in such a plight? I now perceive, that the cause of my exile was to make the world beleeve, that I were runne away with your Highnesse, (and here related he unto me the charge and command the *Prince* gave him, whence we gathered the scope of his malicious intention.) Whilest we thus stood talking, behold there came three highway theeves, that set upon him unawares, where I saw him valiantly defend himselfe, till they in their fight so changed their ground, as I (losing the sight of them) knew not what thereof succeeded, for there being a profound steepy dale, and a great fall of waters, betweene the one mountaine and the other, I must have fetcht a large compasse about to get whither I had seene them, which lay not in the power of my feete to doe, and besides, I imagined that I could not have found him otherwise than dead, for had he beene alive, hee would not have failed to have come to finde me out. All that night lay I in that place, where the firmament was my Inne, the earth my bed, passions my meate, and teares my drink; being kept waking with the new paine of my feete, accompanied with the cold, without any hope of rising ever thence any more; so tired and tormented was I with all extremities of anguish and vexation. Scarce was it day, when I was found in this plight by a countrey swaine, who (taking compassion on me) lifted me up, and (comforting mee in pitifull manner) carried me into a Cottage, where I was lovingly entertained by his wife and mother, who (having restored me with fresh egges, and anointed my feete and legges) laid me in a rusticke bed, with such a diligent charitie, as more they could not have done though they had knowne me for what I was. Three dayes abode I there, and might (if I had listed) have staied there longer, but being

that

that these exceeding poore people could not furnish me with victu-
als for my journey, nor the shepheard neglect his flocke to accom-
pany me, nor I discover my selfe for great shame (having got them
to shew me the way to the sea, to embarke my selfe) I went on my
way; and in stead of rewarding these poore creatures with gifts,
according to the state of my birth and qualitie, I was glad to accept
of them some bread, and an old paire of slip-shoes, according to
the state of my fortune, to save my selfe from starving for hunger,
and from quite spoiling my feete: but wherefore goe I thus prolon-
ging the matter? I made a shift to get me (though with infinite suf-
ferings) unto the sea-shore, which I no sooner descried, than I was
from a-farre off espied of certaine Pirates that lay there a roving
about the shoare, who having seized on mee, fell to a great strife
whose of theirs I should bee, but because they saw mee growne
very weake with want and wearinesse, they suffered mee to repose
my selfe, agreeing that the chance of the dice should assigne mee an
owner. It was the eighth night that wee continued sailing (though
they steered on no direct course, but romed up and downe, accor-
ding as occasions offered them hope of booty) when I heard them
jarring among themselves with swearing they were a-ground, and
crying out of the steere-man to hul, they seemed to be all at their wits
end, for feare of splitting. The winde was somewhat sharpe, but
even and levell with the sea, without any surging billowes; when
I (seeing my selfe fallen into the hands of such a rabble of rascals, re-
solved either to free my self or die) threw me down into the sea with
a plancke, whilst the Foist (carried away with the winde) got farre
wide of me, in the twinkling of an eye; & the night being so obscure,
as I could not descric the shore, I kept my selfe settled on the
plancke till the morning, when being by wearinesse and fasting, re-
duced to the passe wherein you found me, I had the fortune to re-
ceive this benefit from so worthy a *Princesse*, who will vouchsafe
(as I hope) to helpe me yet to get home to my father, as I beseech
your Highnesse to doe, obliging thereby both him and I, for all the
remnant of our lives time.

Eromena, who had attentively listned to the reflexes of so unjust a
fortune in a *Princesse* of so great merit, and who had before under-
stood by others the former passages, said thus unto her; (Noble and
vertuous *Princesse*) there is not any debt due from mee to the gods
(although I owe them many) which I esteeme greater than their ha-
ving made of me the instrument to breake off (as I hope) the course
of your misfortunes. I beseech you to rest you merry, and to thinke
your selfe at home at your own Royall fathers house, whither I will
send you so well accompanied, as you shall not neede to feare either
Don Peplasos or the Pirats. Here are the *Princes* of *Mauritania*, to
whom I pray you to make your selfe known, and to any other what-
soever; for I do not only care little, that the *Prince* of *Catalogna* know
that I professe friendship unto you, but meane to make him know
withall that I will for your sake professe enmitie to him. And then

without staying for an answer, (having sent for the two brothers that staid to come in unto them) she related succinctly unto them the recited Historie: wherewith as *Polimero* was transported to an affect of compassion, so was *Metaneone* violently carried beyond himselfe with a passion of wrath, discoursing and arguing with himselfe, how that all the ill done this innocent Lady, was intended to the making miserable of his *Eromilia*; being very sorrie he had not known it sooner, for then *Don Peplasos* had not so easily slippt out of his hands, whom (when his brothers affaires and his owne were once settled) hee resolved to chastise at any hand. With diverse ends therefore comforted they *Eleina*, promising to hazard in her assistance both their powers and lives, so as being by them thus comforted, and by the *Princesse* supplied with whatsoever befitted her state and qualitie; she thanked the gods for having by such infortunate meanes, so fortunately conducted her thither. Two dayes then after dispatch't *Eromena* a well furnisht Galley to the King of *Arelate*, with hers, and his daughters letters, not consenting to let her goe her selfe, because shee intended to detain her some dayes, till shee were recovered of her sufferings, and then to send her home better accompanied.

In the meane time the two brothers conferred together of their affections; impatiently expecting the Count of *Bona's* returne; whilst the *Princesse* (to prevent the losse of time) assured her selfe of *Luogodori*: confiscating the estates of the Rebels, and therewith bountifully recompencing the merits of diverse Knights, that had in this warre worthily behaved themselves, so as the kingdome was in a small time peaceably settled.

The Count of *Bona*, having got all things requisite for his charge, hasted over into *Sardegna*, where receiving intelligence of the *Princesse* at *Terranova*, he fetching about the Ilands end came to *Portodit Torre*, and leaving the Fleete ride there, went thence to *Sassari*, where the *Princesse* then resided. The *Princes* (having courteously embraced him) and understood of the expedition hee brought with him, were thereof exceeding joyfull; but *Eromenaes* joyes farre transcended theirs, hoping that this *Corisan* enterprize would make up her marriage.

The *Marquesse* of *Oristagno* (who in his youth had beene one of the most amorous Knights of his time, and who by great practise on himselfe and others, was growne to be a skilfull Physiognomist in the affaires of love) seeing her desires written in her face, thus spake unto her; Your Highnesse hath done for the state one of the two things you should doe to make it become fully happy, opulent and flourishing (which is) to have reduced it after such great tempests of war and rebellion to the pleasant calme of peace and obedience. The other thing that is yet to doe, is, to finde out a husband worthy of you, to the end that you may have a companion to beare a share with you in supporting the weightie burthen of government, and

and to bestow on us a faire, goodly, and generous posteritie.

The *Princesse* blushing (though well pleased with so unexpected a proposition) returned him this answer; Certainly I beleeve (Cozen) that you never meant to be old, seeing that you are not yet about to leave off your youthfull humours, would you have me marrie, when there is no man (for ought I know) that will have me; Do you thinke it a thing seemly or fitting for one of my sex and qualitie to go woo for a husband? By the high gods (replied the *Marquesse*) your Highnesse hath reason to conceive of me as you do; for by my goodwill I would never grow old; Where is that man living that desires to be unpleasant? Take away but the jocondnesse of our thoughts, and what are we (old men) good for? seeing melancholy makes a man noysome, both to himselfe and others; and mirth in old age is the gift of heaven; It conserves a man, and makes his company become desired of every one, which if in youth it be dissolute and wanton, yet hath it in graver yeares its gravitie, and its peculiar wayes, so as under the barke of pleasantnesse lies hidden the substance of the Theoricke and Practicke of the world, which being the onely booke for perfecting man, instructs without error, unlesse error bee caught hold of, in its beginnings, and in the simple vulgar opinions. The *Princesse* smiled at his discourse, and (to give him further matter thereof) she replied.

Oh how simple are those *encomions* you make of old age, of that shivering age, which cannot be pleasant, because it wants the vigour of bloud, the efficient cause of mirth. Your Highnesse may reason as you thinke good (answered the *Marquesse*) that reason of yours may hold good in old dotards, as (being long sithence fallen from being any more themselves) are good for nothing; but yet give me leave to tell you that such as fortifie their minds, against the defects of time with good government, against fortune by enjoying her favours indifferently, and against their owne rebellious affections, by having gotten a habitude of commanding them, fall not under the censure of this your reason; for such (keeping themselves from both extremes, (that is) from such things as besit no other than young men, and from excesse of melancholy (which is most habituall in old men) may (finding themselves free from mentall perturbations) conserve themselves a long time in a healthfull and pleasant disposition; in whom if mirth cannot engender love, yet makes it them at leastwise become more sociable and usefull to such as are enamored, not without awaking withall the memory of their owne particular loves, which in them cannot for all that bee blamed, for being confined within the limits of an affection overswayed by reason. You will say then (replied the *Princesse*) that if an old man would conserve himselfe in a blithsome disposition, he then ought by consequence to procure its effects, and therefore the effects of love. I say it, and yet I say it not (answerd the *Marquesse*) The wise old man may bee master of the affects of the minde, but not of the progressions of nature, necessarie to the consideration of such effects, against which

there is no word either of Prudence or Philosophy that can suffice; Yet remains there in him, I know not what thing, which I cannot expresse, that makes him, though having himselfe laid by his armes, delight neverthelesse to see them exercised by young men in the termes of legall affection. Now touching what I have motioned unto you, your Highnesse should doe it of your selfe, and not wonder at me as you doe, for if I were not growne old, I would not stay till some other should put mee in minde of busineses of that nature. Whereat the *Princesse* smiled, saying; And whom (*Cozen*) shall I take to husband? There is no *Prince* but will (when he hath married me) reside in his owne countrey; and I againe will by no meanes leave mine: and for wedding a private man, who will commend me? Neither the one nor the other should your Highnesse doe (said he) but treade a meane path betweene both; and being asked how? he proceeded saying, I meane some *Prince* noble and valourous, though without any means, for such a one can not be said to be a private man, who (in being a *Prince*) shall bee a match befitting your greatnesse, and (for having no dominions) will doe all whatsoever is requisite for your affaires. Yea, but could you name me such a one? (asked with a grave countenance the *Princesse*.) Marry, that can I well, *Madame* (answered the *Marquesse*) Whom could your Highnesse ever chuse more noble, valiant, and generally beloved of all men, than the *Infante Polimero*? Whereat she (changing her colour, and standing a while in a muze) said; I know, that to match my selfe is necessarie, becaule to continue as I am, is for many respects inconvenient unto me; albeit (as your selfe know) I have ever had but a small inclination therto; but the maine difficultie consists in finding out such a one as may give the people satisfaction. I cannot denie but that the *Infante Polimero* ownes all those conditions you speake of, yet reason will not that I be she he should aime at, neither beleieve I, that he will ever offer to looke for me, for feare (perhaps) of being rejected for want of meanes. Neverthelesse if you thinke that this marriage may make for the publike good of the kingdome, take you care then of the managing thereof, and (for my owne part) I promise you not to swerve from your Counsell.

The *Marquesse*, kneeling downe before her, and kissing her hand, undertooke the charge thereof, assuring her he would conduct it in such a manner, as she should therewith rest well satisfied, which indeede he afterwards accordingly performed: for taking opportunely hold of an occasion to exaggerate before the Councell, the favours of the two *Mauritanian Princes*, and to exalt the valour of the younger; and descending handiomey thence to the occasions and affaires of the time, to the infirmitie and decadency of the King, to the sex of the *Princesse* (though valorous, yet feminine) he at last in generall termes proposed the necessitie of matching her with such a husband, as might reside in the kingdome. Whereupon all the neighbouring *Princes*, and others also further off being named and proposed, he found oppositions against every one, except *Polimero*, whose

age and nature, hee considered to be apt to receive the aire and customs of *Sardegna*; who although hee wanted Dominions and meanes, yet wanted hee not forces and warlike troopes, but could upon any occasion procure (as hee had done at that present) great supplies of his father and brother, whose amitie was more profitable, and enmity more dangerous to *Sardegna*, than all the rest of the neighbouring *Princes*.

Some there were that feared there was some dissembling or double dealing in this businesse, so patly proposed in the instant of the arrivall of the *Mauritanian* forces, as if they meant, in case they could not obtaine their desire by faire meanes, to enforce them thereto with their powers; which the *Marquesse* perceiving, assured such of their being therein mistaken: wishing them withall to deliver themselves freely, if they thought that such a match would prove any way inuite or prejudiciall unto them, assuring them of the *Mauritanian* troopes, as well as of their owne native *Sardegians*. Their disputations were at length reduced into resolutions; that the marriage of the *Princesse* was necessarie; that there was not alliance nor match better, nor fitter for her, than that of the *Mauritanian Infante*: and that the *Marquesse* should treat therof, by way of proposition, as proceeding from himselfe, giving thereby rather way and encouragement to the *Infante*, to demand her, than cause to beleeve, that they were already resolved to give her him. The joy that *Eromena* thereof conceived, as it was exceeding great, so was it neverthelesse exceeded with an incomparable prudence, whereby she well knew how to conceale it, answering the Councell that they should finde her conformable to their deliberation.

The *Count of Bona* after hee had delivered his Lords letters, and discharged himself of the troopes and Galleys, being licenced to go on his Embassage, waisted off (as soone as he had received the *Princes* letters) with a prosperous gale for *Maiorica*, where he, and the other Embassadors were received with all such solemnities, as befitted the Embassadors of so great a King. And because the businesse was before resolved of, and this solemne office done, meerely for publike satisfaction; it was easily concluded on, and *Eromilia* promised to *Metaneone Prince of Mauritania*, upon the sole condition, that shee would ever marrie at all.

The End of the Fourth Booke.



CAVALIER

GIO:FRANCESCO

BIONDI HIS

EROMENA

The Fifth Booke.



If great was the fame of *Eromi-
lia's* beauty whilst (abiding in
Maiorica) shee was promised in
 marriage to the *Prince* of *Sar-
degna*, far greater was it, when
 as soone as his death was pub-
 lished, her retiring also was in-
 stantly divulged abroad, the
 resolution and occasion where-
 of, with a reasonable indiffe-
 rency, wrought a generall a-
 mazement, so as such as before
 had her heard commended for
 the extraordinary industries of nature observed in her, now rapt with
 new (partly curious, and partly amorous) affections deemed that
 man happy, whose fortune it were to winne her in this losse of her
 selfe, being it seemed not so inconvenient for any other, to finde in-
 ventions to steale her away; as for her, to invent (her selfe) the
 meanes of depriving her selfe of the world. And albeit the businesse
 in it selfe stood not founded on reason, that a *Princesse* (especially of
 so great a merit) should be constrained to alter her (upon what oc-
 casion soever grounded) indeede rather compassionate than blame-
 worthy resolution. Neverthelesse some discoursing by way of ar-
 gument,

gument, approved it as an act lawfull to search after, and finding to gather up such Jewels, which throwne away by an unwise (and as it were) a prodigall owner, were exposed to the hazard of being stolne away by the unworthy, and so to become subject to light in to their base and abject hands; neither could such an attempt (so it were confined to the bounds of honour) be (for all that) stiled rapine, the intention of the act, being to restore the things so seized on to themselves; and though it be true that its maine scope and ends tended to gaine, yet doth every kinde of labour deserve its hire, nor is that kinde of usury unlawfull which in recompence of its paines, desires but the simple lone of the thing found.

Suchlike were the reasonings of sundry young *Princes* of divers Countries, who like sphericall lines came to meete all in one and the same center; nor is it any wonder that a cause remote, should produce and bring forth the selfesame respects in persons remote each from other, seeing the universall soule that moves and inspires the vaste world, is even one and the same. But those (among the rest) that gave themselves most to these imaginations, were the *Prince* of *Tingitana* and one of his brothers, with the *Princes* of *Andaluzia* and *Granada*.

The King of *Tingitana* in those dayes commanded as Sovereigne all that part of *Affrike* that lies on the Ocean sea, as farre as six degrees beyond our *Tropike*, growne to be great there by fortune and reach of wit, (if wicked subtiles may be stiled the effects of wit.) This King had foure sonnes, that were ever at discord among themselves, who (having together with their breast-milke sucked ambition and desire of rule) could never quiet themselves with other thought than in being every of them left sole without competitors. The King old of yeares, but elder in wickednesse, growne expert in knowing the pravitie of his sonnes by his owne, moved rather by a jealous zeale of himselfe than any affection he bore them, had severed them asunder, by assigning to each of them the government of a kingdome; with the renewes whereof they maintained themselves in an honourable and splendide fashion, without ever abandoning the precepts of soothing & dissembling being a maxime placed in the frontispice of the schoole of those (therein so accomplished) *Princes*; wherein every of them so exceedingly profited, as the fathers selfe, though a great experientist in that art, was (for all his cunning) deceived for beleeving those affectionate-seeming demonstrations to be really true, that were indeede but counterfait, which neverthelesse served for nothing else than for gins and traps, to ruine and overthrow one the other.

Argilo the first borne (who bare the title of *Prince*) abode in *Fessa* (a kingdome assigned him for his share.) *Anterasto* the second, in the fortunate Ilands; The other two possessed two kingdomes in the Meridian parts, the one on this side the lesser, the other on the other side of the greater *Atlas*: purposely placed so distant each frō other, to the end that their neighbourhood might not occasion, or give them

them any subject of enmity. The King himselfe resided at *Morocco* (the heart of his Dominions) thinking hee could more easily bridle the evill inclinations of his sonnes, by keeping them thus severed at so large distances, especially the two eldest, who troubled him more than the rest; but humane prudence is wont to light on oftentimes by shunning, what but for shunning, it had not encountred: for *Orgilo* (having understood by the Lord of *Velez* of the comming of the *Princesse Eromilia*) grew suddenly desirous of enjoying her, guided thereto rather by his beastly appetite, than any kinde of true love, for being unapt to receive those flames which shine but in gentle brests stored with noble thoughts, where-from his was so far alienated, as (for having never harboured a gentle qualitie) he gave himselfe over to be a sordid receptacle of all kinde of foule and mischievous enterprises: onely one sole thing in him seemed to looke with a face of vertue, which was a bodily force inconsiderately used, and a generous seeming spirit, the abundance of his vices straightning him too much from being able to lodge, either true magnanimitie or reall bounty: With such and the like qualities purposed *Orgilo* to work his own ends on the noble person of *Eromilia*. But *Anterasto*, who, with the ambition to reigne, and with impatience to be longer bridled, lived unfortunate in the fortunate Ilands, having understood by the spies he kept in his brothers Court, all his designs, and how hee had caused to be calked and rigged a Galley in *Mamora* for the stealing away of the *Princesse* of *Maiorica* (thinking hee might better bring his project to passe by sea, ariving unawares, than by land with the rushing noise of people, wherwith he might also run the hazard of working a jelousie in his father) thought now or never to lay hold on this so fit an occasion to crush him, and therewithal to possesse the beauty of the most famous maiden in the world. Setled in this resolution he caused two Galleyes to be put in a readines with such expedition, as he was ship'd and at sea, ere it was openly known that he had any intention to embarke himselfe; steering on, because of the length of the voiage, night and day till hee came to lie in ambush behinde a little rock, without the streights of *Collonne*; where, having understood by a frigate which he sent before to *Mamora*, that his brother stood on the point of departure, and well knowing that the *Pegno della morte* could not easily be forced, he held it his best course to advertize the *Princesse* before-hand of *Orgilo's* intention, thereby obliging her to receive him in, as a defender (being altogether ignorant of the vow she had made.) Whereupon, having to that purpose instructed one of his Knights he dispatch'd him away in a frigate with letters of credit, who arriving there by night, & by the centre hindred to land, said, he was sent frō a knight, who was a speciall servant of the *Princesse*, concerning a businesse much importing her Highnesse, whereat *Perseno* (thinking he came from the *Prince* of *Mauritania*) came down to the sea-shore to welcome him, having already understood by *Meta-neones* letters all things that had succeeded him sithence his departure thence, as the taking of *Don Peplafos* and his designs, the King of *Ma-*

iorica's promise of giving him his daughter, his arrival in *Sardegna* & finding out of his brother, with the historie of *Eleina*, and of the *Mauritanian* Ambassadors sent frō his father to the King of *Maiorica* concerning that marriage; neither was it twenty dayes sithence there had arrived a Galley sent by the King himselfe, with particular newes of the promise he had made, of which he wrote not opely to his daughters, thinking it better that the *Countesse* & *Perseno* should at some convenient opportunitie, possesse her thereof, charging them by severall letters to perswade her therto. So as *Perseno*, thinking now that some one sent from *Metaneone* brought him the same newes, came running downewards; when hee soone perceived himselfe beguiled, discovering this stranger knight by his speech and habit to be none of his, growne by this meanes somewhat suspicious, and seeing the other in his answer not fall from generalities, but persisting in saying he had letters to the *Princesse*, touching a businesse of much consequence, he ushered him up, entertaining him with the best countenance that could be, and then recommending him to the company of some Knights of speciall esteeme, he placed him to sup with them, where he dranke his share of the precious wines of *Malaga*, wherewith they ceased not to ply him, till such time as he was knowne to be growne somewhat altered. *Perseno* in the meane time, having made privy hereto the *Princesse*, and acquainted her with his suspicion, besought her by all meanes to give him audience, which she refusing to doe in respect of her vow, *Gierofando* (falling a perswading of her to doe it) told her, that her vow bound her not from such persons, which though it did, yet could it but tie her onely from being seene, but not from being spoken unto, and that therefore she might well speake with him without permitting her selfe to be seene of him: much adoe had they to perswade her to it, till at length, being egged on with the necessity of knowing the businesse she suffered her selfe to be over-swayed.

The messenger was therefore brought in, and a candle so placed, as she could not be seene; whereat he (being already informed of the occasion of the vow) was no whit displeased, but sent in before him his letters of credit; which when the *Princesse* had perused, and seene whence they were sent, she grew to be more curious and desirous to heare him, who used not many words, and those few ill expressed and worse linkt together, whereby was discovered unto her the designe of the *Prince of Tingitana*, and how that *Anterasto* came purposely to defend her, being as he was a Knight obliged so to do, but that in regard the other was his brother, he would not give the King of *Tingitana* his father cause to thinke, that he thus assailing him by the way, was moved so to doe for any other end, than for the obligation of Knight-hood, in respect whereof he intended to give him leave to come under the rocke, and there to punish him; which he had done without making her privie to it, but that he doubted that she (not knowing how the matter stood) might feare some sudden assault. The *Princesse* stood hereat some while in a muze, without making him any answer; till by questioning him how *Anterasto* came to know

know of this attempt and what moved him to incur the hazard of succouring her against his own brother, she gave him occasion to tell more than was either demanded of him, or committed to his charge to reveale; Inſomuch as he affirmed that the deſire of enjoying her beauty, & the affectionate love he bare her, made her become his brothers enemy. Now *Eromilia* had formerly underſtood of their hatred and malice, whereby ſhee knew that the occaſion of this ſervice, ſprung not from any love to her, but rather from the hate he bare to his brother, and that ſuch like love in ſubjects that obſcured the ſweete affection of fraternitie, could not prove to her otherwiſe than diſmall and unluckie; reviving therefore her memorie with the deſignes of the Pirates, than whom ſhe judged theſe more dangerous, ſhe answered him, that ſhe held her ſelfe obliged to the *Infante Anteraſto*, which ſhe would make knowne to the King her father; Howbeit ſhe marvelled much that a *Prince* ſo noble, as his brother was, could harbour ſo theeviſh a ſpirit, eſpecially conſidering how ſhe reſided in the territories of *Tingitana*, where ſhe expected to be protected rather by him than by any other. Howſoever ſhee bade him, (ſeeing he was ſo minded) come and ſpare not, for that ſhe was not ſo ill provided of men and munition, as that ſhe had not thereof both number and ſtore, ſufficient to defend her ſelfe. And that therefore ſeeing the coming of his Lord *Anteraſto* was needleſſe, ſhe prayed him to ſpare himſelfe that labour; aſwell for that ſhe ſtood in no neceſſitie thereof, as alſo becauſe ſhe deſired not that he gave his father the King of *Tingitana* any cauſe of diſguſt, who could not chuſe but ſuſpect the worſt of theſe his proceedings: and then rewarding the Knight with rich preſents, ſhe licenced him. But to the *Counteſſe*, who ſeemed to be ſorry that ſhe accepted not the aſſiſtance of *Anteraſto*, ſhe ſaid, She was loth to give him any occaſion or excuſe to come, being aſſured that his purpoſe was no leſſe abhominable than his brothers, and that (God willing) ſhee would defend her ſelfe from the one and the other.

The firſt thing which the *Princeſſe* did, was to ſend away the two Gallies that rode in the haven to ſave them, being diſfurniſhed of their ſouldiers, employed for the manning of the holds within, from being ſeized on by the enemy, but much rather to give her father notice of the danger wherein ſhe ſtood; and then cauſed all her forces to be ſepered into divers places, not doubting of being able to defend her ſelfe for many moneths, the place being well fortified and provided of victuals.

By no means would the faithfull *Perſeno* loſe this ſo fit an occaſion of letting her ſee, how that her ſtay there was an invitation to any one to come to ſteale her away, who being till then extolled for her vertues and prudence, was now like enough to incur a contrary cenſure, ſeeing the daily perills ſufficed not, either to make her become more warie, or to change her reſolution. Beſides, the expences and diſtaſts of her father, who hazarded the bearing the brunt of ſome dangerous warre, with one *Prince* or other, whereof two

might pretend themselves already injured, who were those of *Catalogna* and *Tingitana*, telling her withall, that God requires not of us ought beyond our power, but is displeased when under colour of doing him service, we doe what we should not doe: that *Perosilo's* soule could receive no satisfaction from these her lugubrious loves; but that her age, the lawes, the kingdome, and the King her father desired an end in this businesse; and that if heretofore it behoved her to match her selfe for conveniencies sake; she was now by necessitie constrained thereto, it behoving her of force to have one to defend her, and to give her selfe to one, thereby to avoide the being thus injured by all.

Eromilia blushed to see her selfe so neerely touched with these reasons, knowing them to be true, by the feeling she had of the present dangers, more than by any thing else, which seconded rather with the teares, than the arguments of the *Countesse*, drew her at last to promise them (as soone as her yeare ended) to returne home againe. Full glad were the *Countesse* and *Perseno*, to have gained on her this point, beyond their expectation, and therefore tooke further occasion to instill into her memorie the modestie of *Metaneone*, who, finding her *Pegno della morte* unwalled and disarmed, would not so much as offer once to put foote ashore, for feare of displeasing her; and now they observing, that his name sounded pleasantly in her eares, and that she listned willingly thereto, signified so much unto the King. *Perseno* writing besides unto *Metaneone*, whom hee besought to favour them with a convoy, being that her father had not a Fleete sufficiently potent to resist so many enemies.

Anterasto's messenger returned in the selfe same time, when by her flagges was descried *Orgila's* Galley gliding smoothly on the chrystal surface of the calme sea, glittering by reason of the reflexion of the golden Sunne-beames, nor was it long ere she entred into the streights, where they lost sight of her. She passed some foure houres before night, and went with an intention (being that the winde withstood her not) to arrive the day following at the *Pegno della morte* ere the breake of day, thinking that houre of all other the fittest time to surprize it.

In the meane time *Anterasto* wayed anchor, and coasting *Spaine*, tooke on him to steere a different way, but at night tacking about, held the same course, by crossing the streights, and coasting along the shore of *Affricke*; wondring not a little why *Eromilia* would not be seene, for which he beleevd not her vow an excuse sufficient, because he, that never was of any Religion, or ever knew the gods, judged of all others by himselfe. And understanding further (by the messenger) wonders of her perfections, which the more unapt he was to judge of, seemed by so much the more strange unto him, he grew the more desirous to possesse her.

Whilest these two (so neere in bloud and resolution) were poasting towards the fatall place prepared for them by destinie; fortune (resolved to represent now a complete Tragedie) had in her scene

scene assembled the two *Princes* of *Andaluzia* and *Granada*, which with an equall designe, had each of them put in order a Galley, to come to the possession of those beauties which were judged so much the fairer, by how much the more they were hid and prohibited. Their fathers Dominions were somewhat neere adjoyning, but their thoughts so farre from any neerenesse of sympathizing one the others, as they themselves but too well knew, that either of them ever endeavoured to crosse the others intentions. Nor should it seeme strange that all of them ranne with so small forces to this enterprize, being that their hope and aime was not to force the rocke, but to surprise it, for who so would have made provision to take it by force, had need of greater power than theirs within, or (attempting it with an equall force) of time, (the father of inventions,) wherewith the neighbours would have beene awaked, and so the execution of their designs interrupted. Wherehence we may gather, that an unripe and imprudent counsell proves oftentimes better than a prudent and mature direction.

The *Prince* of *Andaluzia* had before his setting forth of the haven, descried a farre off a Galley, who crossing the seas, tooke the direct course he meant to steere, suspecting therefore that others might intend as hee did, he launcing out, traced her, till such time as (the Sunne declined) the darkenesse deprived him of the sight of her. The other, who was the *Princes* of *Granada*, albeit she saw this Galley make after her, yet was she nothing suspitious of her, but steering onwards, arrived by three houres of the night, at *Pegno della morte*, with as little noise as possibly she could, suffering her selfe to be carried meerely with the force of her course without any further helpe of oares: which neverthelesse was not so secretly performed, but that the scouts of the *Pegno* descried her, expecting (because of the notice given them) no lesse than to be assaulted. The Knights, without any noise stood every man ready to make good his ground, and (that the enemy might thinke himselfe the more secure) as much as the very rounds had retired themselves.

The *Prince* of *Granada* (armed at all pieces) was the first that set foot on ground, follow'd by two hundred resolute spirits (the greater part wherof were of the bravest Knights in his Countrie) amongst whom one (who had bin there before to view the fortifications) was the first man that (by a scaling ladder) mounted the walls, causing (in the selfesame instant) divers others to be fastned in places lesse difficult. The great silence kept within, made them hold the enterprize for accomplished, there being neither Centrees, nor rounds to be scene. But the skaling ladders were no sooner full, than (with the showing downe from on high, of logs of timber, fire and stones) the assayers were all beaten downe, bruised and kil'd, and the ladders (for the most part) torne and rent all to pieces. Whereupon the *Prince* renewing the assault, and loosing then more than before, seeing the place inaccessible, retired himselfe, just as there came a Galley rushing into the port with great fury; upon the sudden arrivall

whereof he (neither knowing whose she was, nor willing to fight against so many, making up a Squadron of such as remained alive) marched downe to the sea shore, to see whom it was; but receiving no answer, he waxed bolder, and just as he opened his mouth to haile them againe (with his beaver lift up) there hit him a shaft in the very mouth, that pierced him quite through the nape of the necke, where-withal showed so great a cloud of arrowes on the rest of his troope, that almost all of them lay dead in the place; whilest those of *Andaluzia* not so much as once quitted their standing, whose *Prince* made angry for being discovered, assailing with a sudden furie the *Granadan* Galley, easily tooke her, and understanding whose shee was, was passing glad thereof.

These two *Princes* were Cozen-germanes, growne at ods for certaine lands, and other pretentions of the brothers their fathers, become now withall rivals and pretenders to one and the same beautie, which sole occasion had been sufficient ground of enmitie. Howsoever the *Andaluzian Prince* could not chuse but grieve now that he saw the other dead, being that neerenesse of blood, must needs worke something in any one, whose heart is not waxen altogether inhumane, and resolutely given up to hate and revenge. Yet was not the Tragicke example of his Cozens death, sufficient to warne this unfortunate *Prince* from tumbling downe the precipice of the same fortune, albeit by the chillinesse of divers shivering feares his first heate were frozen, for growne now neere his end, he could not give place to the opposition of reason, because it lay not in his power to resist the will of heaven; so as seeing himselfe thus guided by so wavering a passion in the place where his misfortune led him on to slay his Cozen, he more now enraged than enamoured, commanded his men to give the assault, resolved (now that he found himselfe growne to that passe) either to take the rocke or die. But alas, what could he doe with so few men against that hold, which was of its naturall situation so strong as it could not be won but either by surprisall, or by farre greater forces, than his were? Whilest he, thus despairing of what he would have done, but much more desperate for what he had done, made account to retire himselfe, behold the *Prince* of *Tingitana* (hearing the noise of the conflict) comes sweeping amaine over the swelling waves, and seeing the two Galleyes left unmanned, thought it his best course to seaze on them, lest they might be made instruments to indamage him, which he soone accomplished, for finding in them but very few fighting men, he put them all to the sword (without sparing one of them) even to the imbruing his *Princely* blade in the base blood of the raskally Ghing.

The *Prince* of *Andaluzia* seeing himselfe thus surprized (having retired his men from the walls) stood ready to receive this second unlook'd for enemy, who landing with no great difficultie, and understanding by a prisoner the case of the Cozens, (growne cholericke to see his designe thus thwarted) came fiercely on with sword in hand, desirous rather to kill him with his owne hands, though with danger,

danger, than to shoote him through with arrowes as he might have done without any perill at all.

This *Prince Orgilo* was great of stature, and strong as any Knight of his time, who for knowing himselfe to be such, never knew what feare meant, which engendred in him an undaunted temeritie. But as his force was greater than that of a savage beast, so was his iudgement lesse than that of man. Stay to be backed by his he would not, but went on himselfe alone, to charge them all, and had made them all retire too, had there but beene any place of retreat.

The poore *Andaluzo* stood almost under the walls, whom *Perseno* taking for *Orgilo* (as he tooke also *Orgilo* for *Anterasto*) defeated with logs and stones; so as the true *Orgilo* had no great adoe to make an end of the rest, having first with his owne hands killed the *Prince* as he had desired: which effected, he knew not what to doe next; but he from below, and *Perseno* (with his) from above, stood looking the one on the other without speaking a word.

The night was exceeding faire, so as the Moone being then newly risen, discovered them each to other; When *Orgilo* (seeing himselfe injured by none, and thinking to delude them) told them who hee was; and that being advertized of the intentions of these two *Princes*, he was come of purpose to interrupt and chastise them, being an act that concerned him, not so much for being *Prince* of that Countrey, as because he more than any other was desirous to serve the *Princesse* of *Maiorica* their Mistresse. *Perseno* (dissembling his knowledge in those passages) answered him, That that act of his was such as might bee expected from a iust and generous *Prince*, for which he kindly thanked him, on the behalfe of the *Princesse*, and the King her father, both which would therefore remaine his debtors, but that he was onely sorry for one thing, which was, that he had put himselfe to that trouble without any neede, for if he thought himselfe able to oppose two *Princes*, and frustrate their designs with one onely Galley, hee might easily have imagined that the qualitie of the *Princesse* her servants, was not so lithier and effeminate, nor their valour so slender, as not to know how to defend themselves against so few in a place so strong: and that therefore it had beene sufficient for him to have sent the *Princesse* intelligence thereof, without exposing himselfe to such a hazard; or if he would needs come, wherefore came he not then by land, which he might have more easily done, and with more men too, being that there wanted no Barkes at *Velez*, to passe them over to the rocke? Strange seemed this language to *Orgilo*, who judged him too arrogant, and withall too sawcily subtle for penetrating and touching him so neere the quicke of the truth, which made him disdainfully thus reply; I know not what thou art, that speakest thus indiscreetly; I hold the Lady *Princesse* for the most courteous damzell of the world, so as I have cause to wonder, that she retaines in her service a fellow so discourteous as thou art: It befits not thee to examine or pry into the actions of *Princes* who governe themselves according to their particular

cular uncontrouled wils and understandings, not staying to have their actions scanned, by the measure of the common judgement of the vulgar, for the most part false and remote from any true principle. Somewhat more hee would have said, when his owne men (pointing with their fingers) shewed him two Galleyes that came entring the port, whereupon (beleeving them to belong to one of the dead *Princes*) he ranne hastily to the shore to hinder their disembarking.

All this while had *Anterasto* hastned the best he could, for feare of comming too late, doubting of the fortunate temeritie of his brother, from whom he assured himselfe the *Rocke* could not easily be won by so few men as his troopes consisted of, if his brother but once possessed it. And seeing ride there three Galleyes, he was not affraid of them, but marvailed to see them so silent, taking them to belong to the *Princesse*, and imagining that his brother was not as yet there arrived: drawing neerer them, and seeing two of them full of dead bodies, and the third with the colours of *Orgilo* (which he soone descried together with himselfe standing on the shore) he imagined that he had taken the Galleyes, but that for not being able to take the *Rocke*, he had then retired himselfe. His first resolution was to seaze on the Galleyes which succeeded him fortunately, for causing his Archers to play at those squadrons he saw marshalled on the shore, hee gave them no time to remount aboard their Galleyes, as they sought to have done, shooting them at his pleasure, though to no great hurt of those others, who (kneeling on the ground, and covering themselves with Targets closed together one athwart another) sheltred themselves from the shot.

Orgilo had with him the bravest and expertest souldiers of all *Affrike*, so as though inferior in number, he no more feared this assault, than if he had had equall forces to withstand it; nor would he retire himselfe one steppe from the ground he stood on, which was there, where such as came a-shore, were of necessitie to land.

Anterasto (seeing the slender service his arrowes did him) made on towards the shore with a Frigate, whereupon his men (seeing him goe with so few, against enemies that so well defended themselves) leapt into the water to ranke themselves with him; who would have found enough to doe, had they not beene armed with launces, wherewith (maugre the obstinate courage of *Orgilo*) they forced a place to land the rest of their troopes: yet him could they never have forced, if his owne men had seconded him by doing as much as he did, who not caring a rush for the pikes and launces, but encountring them boldly, burst them with his breast in shivers, so confident was hee in the fine temper of his Cuyrasse, not stirring one inch off his ground, but blaspheming heaven, and abusively injuring his followers, branding with infamous titles, and direfull menaces the most valiant of them, who (having retired themselves not cowardly but discreetly for being over-matched in number and armes,) as they forsooke him not in effect, so came they farre short of

of equalling his temerity, reduced to the point of obstinately resolving not to stir thence a foot. *Anterasto*, glad to see him brought to this streight, and desirous to make use of this advantage, commanded his troopes to keep the enemies so separated, as they might not be able to come to re-unite themselves any more with their Captain; wherein hee was straightwaies obeyed; for two hundred of them falling into a close order, interposed themselves between them, leaving *Orgilo* all alone, without possibility of being succoured by any, whilst hee, with his sword in both hands, made himselfe large way, without being hurt of any; for all shun'd the whisk of his mortall blade, which had by its keen cutting, shewn it selfe to be both well tempered, and of finest edge and metall.

Anterasto, who was a Knight of great valour, and though not so strong, yet more dexterous and warie than his brother, whom he desirous to kill with his own hands, (not so much for any distrust hee had of his, who would (if they had known him) have borne him respect, as to carry away together with *Eromilia* and a kingdom, the rich spoiles of three soveraigne Princes) bravely encountred him hand to hand, wounding him with a main blow on the elbow of the sword hand, which although it struck him not downe, because of the goodnesse of his armour, yet was it such as so benum'd him, as he was not able to requite him with the like: so as favoured by this opportunity to make use of his point, he bore him a thrust under the vauntplate, between the two cuyshard pieces, bursting through the mail that assured that part of his body, and running his sword in his belly foure fingers beneath the navell. Full well perceived *Anterasto* that hee had mortally wounded him; yet not satisfied with giving him his deaths wound, but desirous withall to let him dying know by whose hand hee fell. Proud wretch, (said he) th'art now come to that passe which thou thoughtst by thy treacheries to bring mee to; die thou shalt now (maugre thy stout mischievous heart) by my hand, and I will kill thee fairly, as becomes a good Knight, although thy treacherous life never deserved at my hands so honourable a favour.

Orgilo, knowing his brother, and not grieving so much for his death, as to dye by his hand, seeing he could not use his right arm, and that there was no way for him but death, being therefore loth to lose any time in making him any answer, hee (throwing away his shield, and patiently suffering himself to be wounded anew, without offering once to put by any thrust) with his left arm strongly grasped *Anterasto*, whom hee (being endued with extraordinary force) bare to the Shore-brink, which was not above ten paces off, with telling him, Die then I will, for so will my misfortune have it, yet shalt not thou (insulting traitour) out-live mee, for wee will both march hand in hand to the other world, where if there be any field to fight in, I now mortally desie thee to an eternall combate. At which word throwing himself downe headlong into the water with him, (maugre all his struggling to get off) hee bare him downe

to the bottome, whence neither of them return'd ever fithence up again.

Anterasto's Knights, there present, little thinking to see their wraftling come to such an end, were nothing carefull to help their master, seeing the advantage hee had already, much lesse when they came to know his enemy; but when they saw both of them so plung'd in the Sea, they remain'd thereat much astonished. The Frigats ranne to their succour, but too late; and one who diarmed himself to dive under water to fetch them up, soone repented him of his intention, when hee saw it was to no purpose at all, seeing that if they were dead, all his labor was in vain; and if alive, yet was it more than hee alone could do to bring them up again, who besides would have had so much sence as to keep him under water with them, taking him for an enemy, and so should he have been drowned for a third man. But indeed, the truth is, that they cared not much for either of them, all men fearing and hating as well the one of them as the other; so as there were some of them that interposed themselves between the two squadrons that yet continued fighting, who understanding the case, and knowing themselves for vassalls of one and the same King, lifting up their arms (in token of accord) appeased their mortall fury: But seeing themselves on the rock, where they imagined the *Princesse* to have great treasures, they resolved to force the place, under pretext of revenging the death of their lords, by sacrificing to their soules the bodies of such as defended it. Nor could the strong situation of the place restrain them, who grown couragious by their false imagination, prepared themselves to give th'assault.

Returned into *Sardegna* was the *Count* of *Bona*, with an happy answer to his embassage, to perfect the happinesse of Prince *Metaneone*, who the selfe same night in his sweetest sleep, thought he saw some one awake him in great haste; the chamber was without light, yet thought he that all the wall on its fore-side stood open, so as by Moon-light he might see, that he that awoke him was *Perseno*. Fain would hee have risen on his elbow to salute him, when the other (without uttering a word) keeping him down with one hand (with a look melancholike, and all besmear'd with blood) shewed him with the other, the *Pegno della morte* assailed by many men, who strove to come scale the walls. *Metaneone*, turning about to know of him who they were, & how he came thither, lost suddenly the sight of him, and desirous thereupon to rise up, he saw no more neither battell, nor *Pegno*, nor any opening of the wall, but the obscure pitchy darknesse of the night, with the chamber in its former naturall termes and dimensions: come to know himselfe awakened, he marvelled much to see his imagination work so strongly on him, as to make him not onely think his dream true, but even to beleieve that it was no dream at all. Return'd to sleep again, there passed not an hower ere hee was in the same manner again awakened by the *Countesse* of *Palomera*: Seeing again through the breach of the chamber

chamber, the *Pegno* assaulted; but as he would have ask'd her somewhat, he saw she was quite vanished away, & in her place appeare the *Princesse* his Lady and Mistresse, who from the windowes of the Castle, beckoned unto him to come to her succour. Whereupon, throwing away the coverlet, and rising up suddenly without further examining whether it were a dream or no, now he saw himselfe awake, nor beleeving it lesse true in that he saw the Well closed up againe, having cald up his servants to bring him lights, he went to the next chamber, where *Polimero* lay, to whom when he had related the vision, he told him, how he was resolved to hie him thither, because he could not beleve that this vision (or dreame whatsoever it was) contained not in it some myserie; and had upon this parted suddenly, but that the occasions of the warres perswaded him to stay till day, for the avoiding of such suspicions, as might be conceived of this nocturnall and sudden resolution.

Polimero (being as yet very sleepe) said unto him, My Lord and Brother, to stay till day will doubtlesse prove to bee your best course, because so suddaine a departure cannot chuse but be ill taken, and much censured; especially, seeing you cannot goe so alone, but must take with you many of your Galleyes designed for the *Corfan* enterprise. And (then having pawzed awhile) he proceeded. I cannot beleve that either too light, or too free-feeding hath occasioned you this dreame, for being that you supped last night, these fantasies could not proceede from any weakenesse; and on the other side, seeing you fed not superfluously, there is no place left for imaginations, so particular, and distinct, as those you saw; neither is (indeede) your temperature or complexion, any way subject to melancholy; but I should rather thinke, that you were (ere you slept) troubled with some imaginations that caused you to see, in this your dreame, such resemblances as were represented unto you.

No (brother) no, (answered him *Metaneone*) it was not any distemperature proceeding from diet, that hath produced these effects, much lesse any imagination, or melancholike passion, for I went to bed merrily enough disposed; and albeit I denie not that my thoughts are ever busied about *Eromilia*, yet am I sure they are not any thing spiced with melancholy, which though they were; how is it possible for them to have shape so distinct a dreame, if it may bee said a dreame to finde my selfe broad-waking, gotten up, and withall to have spoken once with *Perseno*, and another time with the *Countesse* of *Palamera*, and to see the selfe same things the second time, as at the first; not sleeping, but broad waking; and which is more, the assault, the very place, nay, my Lady *Eromilia's* self out of my chamber, laid then open to the heavens, and splendor of the moone? To these last words *Polimero* halfe-smiling made him this answer; The seeing now your chamber as before; the knowing of the great distance of the persons you saw, and much rather of the place which of it selfe is immoveable, may assure you, that yours was but a dreame, though such, as of it selfe is not altogether to be slighted: for many are of

opinion, that the knowledge which we have of the gods (for as much as concerneth pure nature, and its instincts) depends, partly in the order of such things as wee see in the world, and partly on the motions of the minde in dying, and on the quietnesse and sweet temper of the senses in sleeping: for the soule being in that instant free, and in its pure celestiall disposition foretells us things to come, thereby instructing us how we should govern our selves, which also befalls oftner the good than the bad; the former participating of the divinity in a certain manner, which the evill doe not. By this came in Divination, which many well-ordered Common-wealths, not onely beleaved, but also governed themselves by it; which as I cannot commend, so must I needs confesse, that who so denies not the divinity, cannot deny the examples of divine admonitions by way of dreams, whereby have been ruled both men and kingdomes: onely what I think not well of, is, to credit every dream indifferently; because, as the denying of divine admonitions is impiety, so also to beleave that all dreams are divine admonitions, is both superstition and vanity. I know not what to say of it (answered *Metaneone*) but well know, that the world (for the most part) excludes those things for which it can give no reason, whereof I beleave this to be one. Nor can all the Philosophers that ere the earth enjoyed, make mee beleave, that their ignorance in knowing the reason of things can make that not to be, which experience teacheth us, cannot choose but be in effect. Which he expressed so passionately, that *Polimero* could not choose but smile thereat, and therefore said unto him; It is an ordinary thing for such as desire to surmount others in knowledge, to come short of them therein. To deny either the sense or the effect of things, is, if not ignorance, at least a sophisticall and foolish wisdom; for if this so were, who could give us a reason of the gods: who have bestowed on us many things, not that we should know them, but that we might use them.

There's not a people in the world but beleaves, that things to come may by some meanes or other be foretold, the examples whereof are infinite, and the consent both generall, and authorized, if not by the reason of the efficient cause, yet at least by its effect and successe. We may then conclude that your dream, (not proceeding from any alteration, but reiterated with the testimony of your own selfe broad waking) is a voice come from heaven to call you to succour that *Princesse*, whom (being you) you ought to defend against all the world.

The *Prince* seemed to be herewith satisfied, though not yet well quieted in minde; for having spent the residue of the night in preparing himselfe for his journey and in rowzing up his followers, hee with Impatience long'd for the appearance of the new day, that he might take his leave of *Eromena*. But the *Mauritanian* Knights being scatteringly dispersed over the lodgings, it hapned that the hearing the noise that was made in knocking in so many places, and understanding it to be downe by *Metaneones* order rose vp all-astounded

shed in that she knew not the occasion thereof till having sent for him; hee and his brother both came and participated unto her the businesse, wherewith she then remained well satisfied: for the imagination of not knowing what to imagine thereof, had before very much troubled her. But now she offered him the whole fleet, and (if need were) her own person also, judging it by the quality of the dream impossible, that this faire Princess stood not in some dangerous plight. *Metaneone*, (yeelding her therefore condigne thanks) told her, that hee left with her his brother in pledge of his service, and besought her courteous pardon, assuring her, that no other occasion could have been able to have drawn him from her service, (especially at that time) except this imployment, whereto he held himselfe the more obliged (albeit he had had no such interest therein as indeed he had) because he thought that heaven it selfe had thither call'd for him in particular. Howbeit, hee meant not to take along with him any more than six Gallies, in that hee saw in the vision (whereto he gave credit) the enemies to be but few in number, leaving the others with the rest of the shipping, to be disposed of by her Highnesse as her owne, for such would he have them bee. Whereupon, loth to lose any time; hee suddenly parted (after he had taken his leave of the Princess *Eleina*, who was also come to see what this stirring meant.) By the break of day came he to the Fleet, where embracing *Polimero*, he praid him to send their father word of his departure, promising to advertise him of whatsoever should befall him. And then (having taken his leave of the Marquesse of *Oristagnio*, who would by all means have accompanied him, the Count of *Bona*, and the rest,) he hoist up sails, with so great a desire to be in *Affrick*, that thinking a good gale of winde not sufficient, he would needs have his oars plied withall, which hee was faine to countermand againe, seeing the Seas swell, and the windes maintaine of themselves a stiffe gale, according to his own desire.

Eight daies without ceasing continued his navigation, alwaies attended on, either by favourable gales, or gentle calmes, which (in respect of the goodnesse both of ghing and vessells) no whit disadvantaged his voyage. In the morning of the ninth day was by its dawning discovered to his view, the *Pegno della morte*; and within an houre after were discried, foure Gallies running into that haven, which confirm'd him in his opinion, that his dream was not false, wherefore causing the oars to assist the sails, he arrived there two houres after Sunne-rising.

The Souldiers of the two brothers had done their utmost endeavours to assaile the walls, during the piece of night that rested, but seeing at last the losse they sustained, they retired themselves, with an intention not to get them gone, but to procure of the Lord of *Velex* some supply of men, till such time as their King (being thereof advertised) either sent or came himselfe to avenge the death of his sonnes, for which purpose they had sent to him a Galley. And as they thought in the mean while to repose themselves, they saw

strike into the port foure Gallies, whose lord being *Don Peplasos*, seeing the armed troopes under the walls, with such a number of dead bodies, would not resolve of any thing, till perceiving how few they were, and seeing the Gallies opposing him not, as soone as he came to know who they were, and what had befallen them, he proffered them (on condition they would but assist him to take that hold) the whole place it selfe, with all therein (the persons onely excepted:) quick enough were the *Tingitanes* in accepting this proffer, who suddenly choosing themselves a Captain, sent him to conclude the accord, so as having landed the fresh forces, and gotten new Scaling-ladders, they re-began the fight; the defendants being tir'd out with fighting all the night long, without once closing an eye: whilst *Perfeno*, who had the main care of all things (both in commanding and performing) discharg'd the duty of a good Knight.

Don Peplasos (seeing that place could not be taken by scaling, unlesse it were either at unawares, or by night, caused a Ram-engine to be landed, which, together with its testude, they setled on its wheels, covered with great farses of Goats-haire, to save it from fire. The Ram was fastened with a strong chain, and supported by two timber-beams, joyning angle-wise under it, rear'd up against the wall, in the lowest, evenest, and most accessible part of the Rock. Which done, he (to beat the defendants off the walls) planted above forty *Catapults*, and Crossebowes, which so galled the defendants, that many of them were thereby killed and wounded; among whom *Perfeno* made one, having one arme little better than lost by a Crossebow-shot. The Ram began already to work its effect, and the wall (which was new and hastily built) began soone to yeeld to its ruine-threatening-butts. Remedy there was none, for the leaden Cilinders (which are used to bruise the Rams) the millstones likewise and pillar-pieces were not beforehand provided, no more than the sacks stuffed with straw, which are usually let down between the wall and the Ram, to abate the force of its mighty thump: nor had they as much as iron Wolves and Crows to graspe the Ram withall; for having not (in so short a warning) forethought of assuring themselves against other than a sudden assault; using stones for a shift, instead of oile, sulphur, pitch, and lime, when it was dangerous for the defendants as much as to peep out, so incessantly were they plaid upon by those murdering engines,

The Princessse *Eromilia* (whom feare had caused to strain courtesie with her religious vow) stood o'recharged with grieve, looking out through a window of the Tower, a wailfull Spectatrix of the unhappy conflict: repenting now too late her obstinacy, knowing now by a feeling experience, her fathers reasons to be true, *Perfeno's* persuasions good, and the Countesse her counsell both wholesome and holy. But (alas) what comfort or help can repentance bring in a season when it can doe no good? The Countesse that stood by her (albeit moved and griev'd to think that the Princessse her selfe

selfe was the sole cause of all these evils) omitted not (for all that) that reverence, which a faithful servant in all respects owes his Lord nor yet lost she the occasion of giving her a gentle touch and feeling of her errors, by telling her that *Princes* (how prudent soever) should never deliberate of any thing of themselves alone, especially when affection makes them become passionate, and therefore apt to deceive themselves; which (as she then told her) she thought good to put her in minde of, not for the present, when the evill could not be remedied, but rather to fore-warne her from incurring the like danger in succeeding times. I would to God (answered the *Princesse*) that it might doe mee good hereafter, whereof I much doubt, because I see no way to shunne this present ruine. The Gods will there-from deliver you (answered the *Countesse*) whereof I conceive already an assured hope. See you those Galleyes there? If my sight beguile mee not, they are the *Prince* of *Mauritania's*; your Highnesse hath better eyes than I, I beseech you looke, if the Admirall hath three Lanterns, for if it hath, then sure they are his. The *Princesse* (who had stood all the while, with her eyes fixed on her owne danger, fetching a deepe sigh) turned her looke to the seawards, and spying there the Galleyes, she all joyfull, cried out, that one of them bare such lanternes; but this consolation lasted not a moment, when she now saw the wall battered downe, the enemy enter in, and her men flie upwards towards the house. *Perseno*, seeing the case thus irreparable, being resolved to die, retired himselfe fighting with his unhurt arme, without lending any care to the *Catalan*, who had by publike proclamation granted life to such as laide aside their armes, yet were there for all that but very few that followed not *Perseno's* example.

In the beginning of this service were found to be neere about five hundred fighting men, betweene such as were sent thither from the King, and those that were taken out of the two Galleyes; whereof lay dead almost three hundred, and of them the greatest part slaine by the *Machines*; with the rest went *Perseno* retiring, though alwayes fighting, but the steepnesse of the rocke (making for their great disadvantage, by discovering to the *Catalognian* Archers, the reare, as well as the front) was cause that he lost many of them, so that at length his feeble self wounded again with the push of a pike, and then trampled under foote, gave occasion to such as remained to yeeld themselves to the enemies discretion; whom the *Tingitans* would have put all to the sword, but *Don Peplafos*, who aspired to *Eromilia's* favour, would by all meanes have them all spared; giving them withall leave to gather up *Perseno*, who lay, though not dead, yet dangerously wounded, by whose fatall ruine were utterly overthrowne the nowruined hopes of the poore distressed assiedged; the house not being any whit fortified, but depending altogether on the fortune of the walls below.

The *Princesse* all this while never stirred off the window, where having cald one unto her, shee caused him by waving about a sheete fastned

fastened to a pole, to make signes to the Galleyes to hasten their course, insomuch as *Metaneone* with all the rest saw it, and grieving at the slownesse of the winde though favourable, hee caused the *Ghing* to plunge their oares a-new in the foaming deepe, by meanes whereof he quickly appeared so neere the view of *Eromilia*, as hee might plainly discern her dolorous gesture in the act of imploring his succour; and the *Countesse* with her hands beckning unto him to make all possible haste.

The defendants a little before (when they saw the enimie got in) had lock'd fast the Tower, and fortified its gate with chests and coffers (though it was of it selfe sufficiently strong, being barr'd all over with iron bands) hoping to keepe themselves free, untill the arrivall of *Metaneone*, which fell out indeede as they expected; for *Don Peplasos* unwilling to offer any violence (being already assured that hee had her in his hands, and well knowing that for want of provision and men to defend her, she must needs at last have yeelded) came himselfe in person to the gate, using the most humble and loving termes that could be. But the *Princesse* when she came to know him (growne no whit dejected to see her selfe thus penn'd up by one shee abhorred more than death it selfe) up-braided him his treacheries so disdainfully, that he thereupon re-assuming his naturall disposition, and laying by all fained courtesies, was now a preparing his engines to beate downe the gate, when newes was brought him of the arrivall of six Galleyes. The *Princesse* not regarding him any more, when once she heard the trumpets sound, returned with the *Countesse* backe to the window, whence perceiving *Metaneones* saluting her all armed as he was, she answered him by doing the like in a maner, expressing her gratitude as courteously as possibly shee could, by which favour he thought his courage so multiplied, as hee would to doe her any service, have resolutely fought against all the world. The *Countesse* with signes made knowne unto him the best she could the state they were in. But the *Prince* assailing the Galleyes (which were left almost unmann'd, because of every ones running to the sacke) tooke them without any great adoe, and understanding whose they were, thanked the gods that hee came time enough to thwart those his mischievous designs.

Don Peplasos giving over his late intention of throwing downe the gate, ranne with his whole Squadron downe towards the sea-shore, confused in minde to thinke of what he were best to doe, and astonished at the suddenesse of the enemies arrivall, without being descried on the maine sea, being that not onely his Centrees, but even he himselfe might have easily discovered him thirtie miles off. At last he resolved to stay in the Fort, and there to make good his ground against the enemy, for that he thought himselfe too weake to keepe from landing.

Metaneone, who no whit regarded the hazard of his owne person, growne now furious with love, but more enrag'd with anger, hotly

hotly assaulted the ruines of the wall, not so well defended as assailed, till seeing he therein spent too much time, having placed an hundred souldiers to the Ram, he made them give against that part of the wall that lay next the breach, which being already much shaken with the former battery, with fiftie stiffe blowes fell to utter ruine; so as the Squadron that stood ready to mount the breach, entred it, maugre all the enemy could doe, who now discouraged, were forced to retire as *Perseno* had done before them. When *Metaneone* knowing the *Catalan Prince*, thus bespake him; And is this (*Don Peplasos*) the recompence, wherewith thou requitest the King of *Maiorica's* courtesie and mine, when we freely gave thee both thy life and liberty? Are these the exploits of a *Prince*, or of a theefe? Well, I now promise to doe thee Iustice, which thou deservest as a theefe, seeing thou abusest the undeserved courtesie which I did thee as a *Prince*.

Don Peplasos, (finding himselfe disadvantaged, as well in reason as power, both the generositie of his minde, and vigor of his spirits, failing him together, whether by reason of his wounds, or otherwise) sunke downe to the ground in a swoond and senselesse: *Metaneone*, causing him to be carried by a strong guard into his Galley, gave order, that he should be carefully looked unto, whilest the most part of the rest, who had the happines to die with their arms in their hands, made (by their death) an easie way to their fellowes captivitie, who were not long detained prisoners, but as common theeves hang'd up, without any pittie, about the walls of the Rocke. *Catascopo* had also runne the same fortune, had not *Metaneone* remembred to aske for him, and caused him to bee a-part by himselfe, put in irons, to the end that the deferring of his present punishment might serve him for interest of a greater.

The victorie once gotten, the first thing that *Metaneone* did, was to aske how *Perseno* fared; When understanding the ill plight hee was in, he was much grieved thereat; yet being unwilling to make any stay in the Fort, for feare of displeasing the *Princesse*, he sent a Knight to the Countesse of *Palomera*, with order, that having on his behalfe saluted her, hee should pray her (in his name) to kisse the hands of her Lady the *Princesse*, and to tell her, that seeing the gods had now freed her from her enemies, hee waited onely to receive her commands, whereon depended both his stay and departure, wishing that in the meane time some course were taken for the re-edifying the walls, whereto he would cause his Ghing put their helping hands, especially on the outside which had most neede of, being assured against the Ram-engines, and that if she needed souldiers, he would leave with her as many of them as she pleased. He injoynd him further, to goe and visite *Perseno*, and to tell him that he had come himself to see him, but that he doubted to incurre the Lady *Princesse* her displeasure; with this Knight sent he him his own Physitians & Chirurgians, with divers soveraigne-good things for wounded and sicke men, causing all his to returne to the galleys,

without suffering them to pillage or touch any thing within the compasse of the walls, although it were the spoile of the enemies selves.

Now the *Countesse* (as soone as she saw *Metaneone* runne in the Port, and the *Princesse*, out of her agonies) had begun a-new to perswade her to change her resolution, shewing her, how she alone was the onely cause of the death of so many *Princes*, whose fathers (in case they went about to avenge them as they had reason) would reduce her to such a streight, as shee could not be able to defend her selfe long; telling her withall, that her vowes tied her onely to possibilities, but not to what could possibly not be accomplished. Besides, that shee had already shewed her selfe to the *Prince* of *Mauritania*, whose whole Fleete had seene her, as well as he. The *Princesse* answered her, that shee would follow her Counsell, and that shee would for the execution thereof write to her father, to send to fetch her thence. And what will it boote you to doe so? (said the *Countesse*) seeing that ere your messenger can arrive in *Maiorica*, wee shall be here besieged by all the King of *Tingitana's* forces, whose aime will tend, not so much to the revenge of his sonnes, as to the gaining of this Rocke, now that experience hath taught him (what he saw not before) the importance of such a Fort; which for good reasons was not fit to bee left in the possession of a strange *Prince*. But how can I helpe it (answered the *Princesse*) seeing I have no shipping. What have you not? (replied the *Countesse*) whose then are the *Prince* of *Mauritania's* Galleyes? They are his owne (answered the *Princesse* smiling :) but I know them to bee yours (said the *Countesse*.) And here unmasking the whole state of the businesse she related unto her the great love that the *Prince* of *Mauritania* bore her, and how at the request of the King his father, shee was by her father promised him in marriage; with the Historie of *Don Peplafas*, and all other passages to that purpose, except his secret comming by stealth into that house, which the *Countesse* thought not good to make knowne unto her as yet, whilest her mind were so agitated with passions for the deceased *Prince* his death; which in that it could not be remedied, she should (as the *Countesse* told her) strive to forget, and endeavour to restore her selfe to her father, kingdome, and (above all others) to a husband and posteritie, to satisfie the world with reason, as she had before without any reason, justly incurr'd its censure.

At these words the *Princesse* stood mute, thinking it a strange matter for her to be changed in an instant, and being obstinately resolved to live without any husband, now should, or possibly could dispose her selfe to take one; but knowing that she could not but doe so, her resolutions till then to the contrary, being neither good nor laudable, and that it was a lesser evill to confesse an errour (being that there is no wise man but erres sometimes) than to make it the more unexcusable by defending it, shee quite changed, or at least most resolute to change her intention, told her, that she marvelled she had not acquainted her with those things sooner,

sooner, howbeit the reason (why she did not) gave her (in that behalfe) sufficient satisfaction; her servants being afterwards come to certifie her of *Metaneone's* conquest, and *Don Peplasos* his imprisonment, she having caused the Tower to be opened, made them carry *Perseno* neere to the *Countesse* her withdrawing-chamber, for whose wounds she grew so compassionate as they drew pearle-like teares from her faire chrystall eyes. And understanding now that there was a Knight there sent from *Metaneone*, she sent to him the *Countesse*, who having received the embassage, came and acquainted her therewith; whereunto *Eromilia* (after a short pause) returned this answer;

Goe and pray him to kisse his Lord the *Princes* hand on my behalfe, and to tell him that for the rest, I intend to answer to none but himselfe, for seeing that I am constrained to breake my vow, I meane hee shall be the man that shall breake it, by seeing me first of any other, desiring him therefore to vouchsafe (so it be not troublesome unto him) to come hither himselfe. The exceeding joy the *Countesse* herat conceived cannot be expressed, who went her self to conduct the Knight with the Physitians and Chirurgians to *Perseno*, whose wounds not being mortall, were with all diligence by them carefully look'd unto; but the soveraigne balme that cured him indeede was his Mistresse her resolution told him by the *Countesse*; so as having answered the Knight, as he was in respective dutie obliged, he licensed him to returne to his Master.

Metaneone as soone as he understood this unexpected answer, would needs suddenly runne up, but considering it to be then dinner-time, he thought best to deferre it a little, when lifting up his eyes by chance, he saw the *Countesse*, that beckned to him to come up; whereupon (accompanied with a few, leaving all the rest below) he ascended the rocke.

The *Princesse* made a shew of beleeving that he comming from as farre off as *Sardegna* (without touching land any where) was unfurnish'd of provision; and therefore seeing that he came not, had willed the *Countesse* to call him; albeit she was by reason of the ruines and losses occasioned by the last great bickering deprived of the meanes of entertaining him any thing sumptuously. But that was not indeede the while her intentions aimed at, for the truth is, that the desire she had to see him was so great, as she had not the patience to stay till he came, she being now (upon the *Countesse* her perswasions) rotally changed from what she was before. Nor might this be said to proceede from inconstancie, seeing that she in all her actions manifested the contrarie; than which it should rather bee beleeved, that she being by nature endued with a constant inclination to whom shee was to bee married, loved *Persosilo*, beleeving him to bee the man, and in the errour it selfe followed her naturall inclination; but come in the end to see and know the vanitie of her amisse-shed teares, the reall blame she thereby justly incurr'd, the more than great evils and inconveniences

that thereupon ensued, and withall how this *Prince* had served her, deserved her, and obtained her ere ever she knew him, she could now doe no lesse than follow the instinct of her generous nature, which was to love him whom the heavens had appointed for her.

Metaneone being come up, the *Countesse* came to the gate to meete him, where she would have kneeled unto him, but that he permitted her not; howsoever shee rapt with an extremitie of joy, said unto him; A great good fortune was it to us (valorous *Prince*) to meete with your Highnesse, sithence thereon depended the safetie of us all, who had else beene twice lost ere this time. Nay rather, right fortunate was I (answered the *Prince*) in having beene favoured with the occasion of serving my Lady the *Princesse* in your person, who deserve to be served for your owne sake. Whereto she with a respective obeisance replied; Your Highnesse knowes well how to oblige too much; although I cannot have too-much time to acknowledge your *Princely* favours. Vouchsafe (I beseech your Highnesse) to come in, and be joyfull, for you shall finde my Lady the *Princesse* an altered woman, so as I am induced to beleve that your Highnesse is the true *Perosilo*: and here related she unto him succinctly, how she had acquainted her Lady the *Princesse* of her being promised unto him in marriage. Meane while the *Princesse* stood expecting him at her chamber-doore, where come, he kneeled downe before her, and with a reverent force taking her hand, kissed it with an observant affection; so as I know not whether his presence or carriage liked her best.

Now *Metaneone* was (next *Polimero*) the best accomplished Cavalier of those times; and whereas he at first hated such courtesies as were peerelesse in *Polimero*, in whom he also disliked all other perfections; So now hatred being chased away, and love brought in, in its stead, there came running in with it (headlong as it were) all his brother's vertues (at least much resembling, if not of equall weight with them) as though they had beene formerly violently and unnaturally excluded.

The *Princesse* offended with her selfe that she was not able to hinder him from doing such courtesies, would not heare him a word whilest he continued in that kneeling posture; but seeing his courage sufficed him not to utter one sole word (so wrapt was he with the joy conceived in seeing himselfe in presence of her, who was the rich Cabinet, wherein lay stored all his best of happinesse;) she, perceiving the cause of this silence, said thus unto him;

Right excellent *Prince*, Let it not (I pray you) seeme any wonder unto you, that I after so much time brake off now that deliberation which I once purposed constantly to observe during the remnant of my life. I beseech you not thinke me such, as being first ill-counselled by my selfe, am now at the perswasions of others, removed by reason of any naturall levity; for if it so were, I would rather chuse to continue unhappie (as I was before) than to re-acquire my former being, by running the hazard of an opinion somewhat

what sinister as you in that behalfe might conceive of me. I will passe over with silence all those reasons, (which as both your selfe and any one else may easily judge) perswaded me to alter my course of life; but of one onely (seene by none) will I make mention. And with this rising up to make him a low congey, she proceeded; This is the obligation and tie of duty I owe you, to conforme my selfe thus to your will, which if my father hath thought fit for me to do, for greater reason have I to judge it so, and will doe while life shall last. I thanke you not, either for your past or present favours; si-
thence that you have now recovered that which the heavens had prescribed you, which being yours, and by you (as you manifest) beloved, the thanks you therefore owe, is to your selfe. And with this (my Lord) I thought good to acquaint you, not so much for declaration of my obedience to the King my father, and expression of my gratefulnesse to you my benefactor, as that you might hence-
forwards (as sole Lord) dispose of our stay or departure, profes-
sing before all the world, that I will for ever hereafter, depend wholly on that honest, courteous, and discreet will of yours, that knew so well how to oblige me.

The chamber was full of people, that thronged thither to see how their Mistresse would behave her selfe, among whom were also the Knights that came with *Metaneone*, and she spake somewhat loud of purpose that all might heare her.

The Countesse, with the other Ladies, when they heard her, burst out a weeping so tenderly, that *Metaneone* had much adoe to hold from doing the like, so strangely was he surpris'd with an unexpected content, but very few were they, who shed not some teares for companie with the women; whilst he offering to kneele downe, but by her not permitted, returned her this answer;

My ever-onely Lady, Nature that was so careful to create your Highnesse singular, above all things else, should by its singularities assure you, that there is no judgement so clouded, as (considering your wayes) can chuse but know your actions to be completely perfect: and though it were possible that any such could be, yet should it bee constrained to confesse, that in you the very errors themselves are perfections; which stealingwise accompanied you, and being ambitious of honour, and covetous of fame, changed both name and nature, being not (for all that) grafted, but onely fastned to the boughs of the goodliest and perfectest tree, that ever the gods of husbandry for celestiall delicioufnesse planted among the terrene ones of humane Paradise: For who could have knowne how to leave father, countrey and Realme, without any blot of error, except your unparalel'd selfe, who have even in erring abounded in a singular constancie, and incomparable worth of love, farre surpassing all the constancies and merits of the world? Your Highnesse then should not doubt, but rather confidently beleeve, that you shall thereby reape the more praise; in that so praise-worthy an error cannot sufficiently be prized, which I repute to be more per-

fect, because its sole perfections having invited mee, it of it selfe so ravished me, as I being really transformed into a sweete error, cannot (without error) call my selfe more mine owne. Now for that it pleaseth your Highnesse to make me happie, by seconding the Will of the King your father, I have not words to expresse my thankfulness, nor effects to serve you conformable to your merit, onely there remaine in me a desire and a will to both. And because your Highnesse merits all that is good, too too blame were I, if after having given, what else was mine; I detained from you these that are yet left me. Accept them then I beseech you to make mee will and desire, if it bee your will that I may wish; and your desire that I may desire; who account my selfe no other than the obedient executor of your commands, and in that right happie, since fortune hath raised mee to so high a pitch, as to be thought worthy to serve you.

The *Princesse*, who had now converted her widdowly moane into fresh teares of conjugall affection, joyfull of having acquired so courteous a *Prince*, would not leave him unreplied unto with a gentle correspondence of courteous thanks-yeelding; which ended, and the houre of dinner a good while passed, they sate them downe with better content, and more consolation in the straightnesse of that *Rocke*, than others of their ranke and eminencie would have done among the superfluous varietie of royall Palaces.

Needs would the *Prince* (as soone as he had dined) goe see *Perseno*, whom the *Princesse* also favoured with the same honour, where after some gratefull passages, they had no time to discourse of ought else than of their departure, which somewhat troubled *Eromilia's* minde, for not knowing how to dispose of the *Rock*. But the *Prince* (who well knew the *Tingitanan* Kings ambition, and how that such a place well fortified, might curbe him at any time) resolved not to abandon it at any hand; so as their departure was deferred for no other cause, than for the refabricking of its ruines, and hewing the rock in such a contrived maner, as no engins might approach it, which in few dayes was dispatched, by the helping hand of the Galley-slaves, who laboured thereabout every one his share. The *Princesse* would have him leave some of his to governe it, whereto he would by no meanes condescend (deeming it as yet unbeseeming him so to doe;) but prayed her to leave there for Commander *Perseno*, the rather, because hee being grievously wounded, could not chuse but grow to be in worse plight with the motion and rowling of the sea: the *Prince* himselfe sending to *Orano* (a frontier citie of his state) for all things requisite for him to assure that hold against a long siege, promising him withall (in private) that in case it pleased him not to stay there, he himselfe would procure his father in law, to send him a successour, gratifying him in the meane time with large rewards of honours and renewes from *Mauritania* of his owne things pertaining to his principallitie. Things reduced to this head, he embarked himselfe with the *Princesse* and all her family, steering

steering on a direct course for *Maiorica*.

Now *Eromilia* had by *Metaneone's* counsell (ere shee parted) caused the Brother-Princes to bee fish'd up, whose bodies she sent embalmed in two coffers, to the Lord of *Velez* with the two remaining Galleyes, together with the full relation of the fact, (whereof he was before sufficiently informed) praying him to send them to the King of *Tingitana* their father, not without expressing her being sensible of the violence done her in their Dominions, and in a place purchased of the Governour himselfe; whereto he dissemblingly answered, That the *Princes* came to no other end, than to defend and rescue her, having understood by their spies the designs of the *Princes* of *Andaluzia* and *Granada*. And that if one of them endeavoured to force the Rocke, it was for the discourteous language given him by the Captaine of her Garrison.

In the same manner were the bodies of the other two *Princes*, together with their Galleyes, consigned to such of their men as remained alive; thereby to take away all pretext of grievances; advertizing thereof, besides the Courts of sundry *Princes* by particular letter, expressing the manner of the fact, to the end that the truth might be every where knowne. Onely *Don Peplafos* was reserved to his wives determination, being deemed unworthy to enjoy the prerogative of a *Prince*, or honour due to a Knight, for being culpable of two faults, and in each of them two severall times guiltie, after having for his first offence in the one and the other, obtained pardon; offences of a base minde, an impious heart, and mischievous affect; and against that sex, which nature made pious, that it might even of crueltie it selfe obtaine pittie; yet he, more cruell than any cruelty, moved with a barbarous avarice of Tyrannicall ambition, had twice attempted the death of chaste *Eleina*, to deprive her, both of life and honour, and to make her twice miserable, with the rape of the gentle *Eromilia*; besides, his ingratitude towards the King of *Maiorica*, and *Prince* of *Mauritania*, who albeit they knew his ill intention, yet (because they thought it impossible for him to fall into relapse of so foule and enormous a fault) had both set him at liberty, and honoured him. In such a fashion was his Inditement framed, not by notaries, upon the testimony of two or three; nor written in fragile papers, but in his owne conscience, approved by the deede it selfe, made notorious by the attestation of all that part of the world, and registred in the most tenacious memories to be conserved for a perpetuall tradition to posteritie, to the horror, not so much of the good, as of the mischievous; that, as fame is the reward of the well-doer, so infamy might be a punishment to the ignominious liver,

The *Prince* (as wee have said already) had six Galleyes of his owne, besides those foure of *Catalogna*, which he assured from running away, by intermingling the Ghing together, so as they being first well armed, and then assured with the exchange of Galley-slaves, he assured them yet better with souldiers, and the family of the

the *Princesse*; whom with her Ladies, he lodged in his Galley Royall, serving her by day, with the greatest respect that could be, and at night retiring himselfe into the Admirall of *Catalogna*, for commodiousnesse and burden little inferiour to his.

More joyfull was *Eromilia* at this her parting, than at her coming, telling the *Countesse* that she now found it by experience to be true, that violent infirmities cannot be otherwise cured but by conformable remedies; confessing that but for the continuance of those dangers that gave her a true feeling of her then being, it had beene impossible to free her selfe of her melancholy, and to be perswaded to returne whom: but now by seeing, with admiration every day more than other, the *Prince's* discreet manners and behaviour, the love of him living, served as a wedge to knocke out of her minde the memory of the other deceased.

Their Navigation was short, and favoured with gentle windes, yet to them seemed it farre shorter than indeede it was, for that the joy which their hearts conceived of their amorous conversation, made the houres and dayes runne faster, all things appearing unto them, with an aspect more gratefull. And indeede darkenesse it selfe lets happie men see its shadow more pleasant, if not lesse darkesome, and the heavens that seeme to threaten troubled hearts, doe sport and play with the contented.

Before *Eromilia* was assailed of any one, there was muttered a certaine murmur in *Maiorica*, that she was assieged and in danger to bee lost. Great enquirie was made to finde out the Authour thereof, who could not for all that by any possible meanes be knowne; there being not any vessell or shipping, arrived from any where, so as the King (who was wise) thought it could not chuse but be true, deeming it some naturall effect of the number of those, for which no reason can be given; remembring he had read, that a great King being slaine, the fame of his death fore-ranne the fact, a full moneths-time; which albeit it had its reason, that there were many in sundry places, that were privie to the conspiracy, which being to be effected from moment to moment, and yet not executed, made such as were farthest off, thinke it done indeede; whereon ensued the fame of giving out that for done, which was to be done; nevertheless hee wanted not other examples free from this opposition, whereby he came to know, that there be invisible channels of reciprocal correspondencie between minds separated by place, but conjoyned by naturall sympathy, by meanes whereof the one comes to receive light from the other. Hence proceed the buzzing of the ears, the palpitation of the heart, dreames, apparitions of seeming spirits, sudden melancholy in evill, and sudden joyes in good, whereof wee know no reason at all; but howsoever it be, the King beleeving the common rumor to be the effect of an effect to it conformable, in a short time set in order a Fleete of tenne Galleyes, and of many of such ships, as he found riding in the ports of his kingdome; whereof he leaving the government to the Queene his wife, embarked

barked himselfe, resolved to free his daughter from danger (if shee were in any) and if in none, to free her from any further suspicion thereof, by conducting her home againe; but seeing he lost time, by encountring for the most part with contrary windes, he resolved (leaving the ships behinde) to make onwards with the Galleyes; nor was he gotten ten miles wide off them, when he descryed tenne Galleyes, steering aright course towards him, whose they might bee, whether friends or foes, he could not imagine; but his prudence inclining to suspect the worst, made him prepare to fight.

This King was somewhat stricken in yeares, but yet a lustie old man, with a body enured to suffer, and nerves hardened with the continuall exercise of the sling, (a weapon more used in those Ilands, than in any other part in the world;) wherefore he (armed at all pieces) with a couragious and joyfull countenance heartned and cheered up his men to behave themselves valiantly.

Neither of the Fleetes shrunke backe, but held on their courses in a right direct line, the one against the other.

Metaneone thinking them to be enemies in that he tooke them for some *Catalans*, that went with these new forces to finde out their *Prince*, set out his Standard of warre, resolved to use them as barbarous savages.

The *Princesse*, who till now (to her passing content) stood beholding the pleasantnesse of the calme sea, and listning to the musicke, which the waves (like a second quire) made at the stroke of the oares, finding now her pleasure corrupted with the feare of the Fleet that came towards her; and beseeching the *Prince* to retire himselfe, could not chuse but grieve thereat, her heart telling her, that to fight then, was a resolution taken contrary to all reason.

Both Fleets were now come somewhat neere, without knowing one another, when having fitted their hatches, they mann'd their Frigats from either Fleete to discover each other; come to know the banners, and to haile one the other; it cannot be credited with what an extraordinary fleetnesse they speeded each backe to his Lord,

When *Metaneone* heard of the King of *Maiorica's* being there, he ran to the chamber to acquaint therewith *Eromilia*, who abounding in tenderneffe of affection, returned up againe to see her father. The *Prince*, intending to conduct her to him, caused a Frigat to bee covered to shade her from the Sunne, which then was most violent and scorching hot. But the King mounting on the selfe-same vessel, which brought him the newes, that his daughter was a conveying homewards by the *Prince* of *Mauritania* (not standing on any termes of ceremonie) went on all alone towards the Royall. Whilest *Metaneone* (on the other side) boording his Frigat, launched out to meete him, saluting him with such a respective reverence as he could not have used greater towards the king his father, go in to kisse

his hands he would not for doubt of interrupting his content of seeing his daughter, but followed him neere at hand. Before the King arrived at *Eromilia*, he saw her oftentimes saluting him with submissive inclinings; but come to embrace her, he had not the power to sever himselfe from her, his royall gravitie not being sufficiently powerable to withstand the motives of his spirits, in such an encounter. *Eromilia* wept, nor did hee lesse, and if the respective consideration of seeing the *Prince* stand on side of him, had not somewhat enlightned him, he was not likely to be soone disenvolved out of the passions of his fatherly affection: whereupon leaving her, without having had the power to speake one word unto her, he ranne with his, as yet bedewed eyes, to embrace *Metaneone*; who kneeled to him to kisse his hand; but he obstinately striving to get him to stand up, debard them of the time to expresse each to other, otherwise than superficially, the joyes they conceived for the happinesse of this encounter, for retiring to *Eromilia*, and causing her to sit on one side of him, and *Metaneone* on the other, (after hee had received the *Countesse* with the other Ladies that kissed his hand) hee lifting up his eyes, thanked the gods that had granted him this joy, relating unto them the occasion of his coming. The *Princesse* (marvelling thereat) told him, that his opinion was not false, acquainting him with all that had hapned, and how that, but for *Metaneone's* coming, shee had remained a prey to *Don Peplasos*. Then *Don Peplasos* (saide hee) came to steale you away againe? Hee came indeede (answered *Eromilia*) and wee have him prisoner in that Galley there. The King somewhat musing thereat (turning towards *Metaneone*) said unto him; And you (my noble sonne) how hap'd you to arrive so opportunely to rescue *Eromilia*? On this *Metaneone* related unto him all that befell him sleeping, whereof though hee had already informed *Eromilia*, yet forbore shee not to marvell thereat anew. He told them how the vision was reiterated; himselfe being not deceived in having seene, talked, and walked; that being parted without staying till day came, it pleased the gods to favour him, in conserving unto him by their pietie, what his Majestie had out of his Royall courtesie bestowed on him; for which hee now kissed his hand, being not permitted to doe it before. The King embracing him, and glancing a looke on *Eromilia* (who though shee blushed, yet meant not to denie her consent) thus replied;

Sithence then the heavens will, that she be yours, who have now two severall times acquired her, so as I am (for that sole respect) obliged to give her you, I beseech you to beleeve, that if I had not already bestowed her on you, I would most willingly give her you, onely for your merits sake. For which hee, kissing his hand againe, and discoursing with him a good while about the dreame, desirous at length to leave him all-alone with his daughter, rose up with an excuse to goe salute the *Barons* of *Maiorica*.

Glad

Glad was the King to see the alteration of his daughter, and the humilitie wherewith shee craved his pardon for her past disobedience, delighting to know of her more particularly all past successes, together with the manner of the fortification of the Rocke. Arrived afterwards to his shippes he might see them turne sterne; so confuted were they to see so many Galleyes fall towards them so suddenly and unexpected, but come to know what they were, they tack'd about to accompany them, arriving with the others all together in *Maiorica* with as much joy to the Queene, and all the kingdome, as may be imagined at a returne so unexpected.

There were arrived also in *Maiorica* the two Galleyes that came from the *Pegno*, who were not so fortunate as to meete the King, in that they hapned to passe one night a good distance wide off him, and now (having provided themselves of such men as they wanted) they rode prepared to returne to the *Pegno*, when the Fleet arrived.

Metaneone would not deferre the nuptials of his *Eromilia*, albeit he desired to have them solemnized in the presence of *Polimero* and his fathers Embassadours; but considering how he stood imployed in an enterprise, which hee could not so soone rid his hands off, hee thought it sufficient to advertise him thereof, sending him backe againe the six Galleyes, and those foure of *Catalogna*, with foure others, that the King would needs send *Eromena*, writing unto her that hee would have sent her more, but that he doubted of some accident, because of *Don Peplasos*, who was directed to *Eleina* to bee by her disposed of, as she thought good. *Metaneone* sent also to *Mauritania* to his father the newes of his adventures, and also of his marriage, to receive from him order of his stay in *Maiorica*, or coming with his wife to *Rirsa*, who in the meane while staid there to console her parents and kingdome with her presence.

The Galleyes (being once departed) sail'd on with a smart gale to *Sardigna*-wards with *Don Peplasos* by this time fully cured of his wounds, who observing himselfe excluded from the sight of the King of *Maiorica*, where he had beene, and of *Metaneone*, who had taken him prisoner, and sent him to his wife (by him so unworthily and inhumanely used) hee well perceived there was no account made of his qualitie, and therefore often-times proffered to kill himselfe; but being prevented of his purpose by the diligent custodie of such as guarded him, he bethought himselfe of a way of deceiving them, by changing apparences, and shewing himselfe lesse altered, and with a more quiet minde, taking on him to desire what hee most abhorred, which was the sight of *Eleina*. Whilest then the Galleyes (one morning ere Sunne-rising, by the favour of a strong Western gale) glided on a maine speede, there discovered it selfe within kenning the Iland of *Sardegna*, whereat the Ghing gave a joyfull shout, crying, (Land, land) which as soone as *Don Peplasos* heard, hee cald for his clothes, and having put on a chamber-weede, made a shew of being desirous to take the aire, and to re-

fresh himselfe with the sight of the shore, after his being over-tired with his long sojourning at sea; come up on the hatches, he stood still a-while beholding the Iland, then walking a turne or two, seriously musing, and standing with his face towards the ladder of the Galley, he suddenly let fall off his gowne, and leaving therewithall his slippers, leapt down into the sea, with such an unexpected suddenesse, that he was plunged therein, ere any one was aware of his intention: whereupon the sailes were stricken downe with great fury, but to little purpose; for the Galley being runne onwards above two miles, ere the sailes could be taken in, or the long-boate hoist out; (the Frigat of the Royall hapning then to be sailing before the Fleet.) The lewd-lived *Prince* was drowned ere he could be succoured: his body was found floating on the sea, and swollen with water, which brought a-boord, was laid under hatches, to the great discontent of the Admirall, who was very sorry that he could not deliver him to *Eleina* in the same state as he received him. But now (seeing the accident remediable) they having placed him with his head downwards, to emptie his body of the water, afterwards covered it with a beere-cloath of blacke velvet, bearing that respect to his life-lesse corpes, for having beene those of a *Prince*, which hee deserved not living, having leade a life unworthy of a *Prince*.

Arrived in *Porto Torre*, they found not the Fleet there, and understanding how that it was passed into *Corfica*, they also with favourable windes crost over, bathing their anchors (by the waxing browne of the evening) in *Portoficari*.

The End of the Fifth Booke.

CAVALIER
GIO:FRANCESCO
BIONDI HIS
EROMENA

The Sixth Booke.



Omewhat pensive remained *Polimero* after his brothers departure, not well approving of such resolutions as are built on the slipperie foundation of dreames; but seeing that it lay not in his power to remedy it, he with the rest of his companie, returned to *Sassari*; whilest *Eromena*, growing more and more ardent in her love, and burning with its violent flames, solicited the *Corfan* expedition, thereby to rid her selfe the sooner of the time interposed betweene her and the conclusion of her desires. The King desirous to console himselfe with her presence, oftentimes importuned her returne, but she resolved to bring first the warres to a period, comforted him with her letters, acquainting him with the Councell necessarily concluded on for the establishing, by the conquest of the *Corfan* kingdome, a perpetuall peace in *Sardegna*, assuring him that the war could not long last, the enemies wanting a head to guide them, now whilest the infeeble body was not able to support it selfe; which indeede even just so succeeded, for she (embarking her forces, and crossing the sea) brought downe in lesse than foure moneths

time, the innate pride of the high-soring *Corſan* ſpirits, which (for all *Polimero's* great exploits) ſhe could not have ſo performed, if they had either had a Captaine, or not wanted thoſe that remained dead in *Sardegna*.

Now *Eromena* was at *Tolmido's* arrivall in *Sagona*, accompanied with the *Princeſſe Eleina*, who could not be diſſwaded from following her, both of them delighting every day more and more each in the others converſation; and in *Eleina* were every day more than other new wonders of alteration diſcovered, for that her ſtudies having given her a perfect knowledge (as much as imperfect diſciplines can give to true perfection) made her capeable of taking delight in everie thing.

Paſſing joyfull was *Polimero* of *Tolmido's* comming, who having reade his letters ran to the *Princeſſe* to preſent her with hers, whence they went both together to *Eleina*; who (good Lady) underſtanding the miſerable caſe of her husband, ſtood ſomewhile mute thereat, whileſt her waterie eyes were not ſufficient to retaine her teares, for ſo much as a generous heart cannot chuſe but grieve for another's miſerie, eſpecially for that of ſuch, with whom it formerly held any communion of amitie; ſee his body ſhe would not, nor the place where it lay, but beſought *Eromena* to be pleaſed (for her ſake) to ſend it to his father in *Catalogna*, which was accordingly performed in a Galley painted all-over with browne, with ſailes and tacklings of the ſame colour. But *Cataſcopo* would ſhe at any hand retaine for the manifeſtation of her innocencie before her father in *Arelate*; whom *Polimero* (curious to heare the reſt of this ſtory, requested alſo thereto by *Eromena*, and *Eleina* her ſelfe) cauſed to be brought in before them, where he (deſpairing of being ſaved, now that he underſtood of his Maſters end) thus ſaid unto him; Moſt valorous Prince, I now ſee in my ſelfe what I have a thouſand times obſerved in others, *that of things not good the end was ever the worſt*; wherein Princes themſelves are not priviledged, ſince that mine, for falſely accusing his wife the firſt time, reaped nought elſe from it but ſhame; and for endeavouring to make her away the ſecond time, was by his owne conſcience prick'd on to make away himſelfe; the gods having miraculoſly ſaved her, to ſave together with her life her *never blemiſhed honour*. And I (well may I ſay, moſt wretched I) drawne on with the ſweetly alluring baite of vaine ambition, (after having betrayed a Maſter, than whom I could not have deſired a better) ſee my ſelfe now likely to end deſervedly my dayes, with ſome kinde of unuſuall and ignominious death. Now touching what your Highneſſe commands me concerning the entire Story of the Lady *Princeſſe Eleina*, I will willingly obey you, without either concealing what may ſerve for the clearing of her innocency, or excuſing my ſelfe in any thing that might *lighten* or *extenuate* my fault. Here related he all that *Eleina* her ſelfe had told them before, till the inſtant of her ſwooning, continuing the narration of the reſt, with theſe words;

The *Prince* before his departure, gave me order to goe my wayes before him, to spie out a fit place to kill and burie in the *Princesse*; to the end that when her body could not be found by any, we might boldly give out, she was runne away with *Calaplo*; I went, but because the places neere the Temple were indifferently frequented with Priests and Pilgrimes, I was faine to goe a good distance wide off it, ere I could finde a place for the purpose. I had with me two (I know not whether I should terme them souldiers or executioners) sure cards to the *Prince*; whom he was wont to make use of for the taking away of the lives of many. Wherefore he thought he might well trust those, who charged with the burthen of a thousand offences, had no other stay on earth than his countenance, nor could he indeede chuse but make use of them, being that hee would not himselfe, nor saw me willing to strike that bloudy blow; I then, and those fellows with disguised cloathes and false beards followed the *Prince* a-farre off (being by me first informed of the place) when shee fell in a swoond, whither he cald us, and would needes have her slaine in that very place; but there being not so much as a handfull of earth to cover her body withall, he knew not what to doe; yet because it behoved him to resolve of some course, hee made us continue to carrie her towards the place appointed, looking alwayes round about him, to see if he could espie any other fit for that purpose. But we, going on a slow pace, by reason of our burthen and difficultie of the stones; he both weary and vext with impatience told us, hee was not able to follow us any further, and therefore would (lest his absence might give cause of suspition) returne backe againe, leaving to our charge the execution of the businessse. Which said (I know not whether it was to necessitate us not to let her live or otherwise) hee himselfe cut off her cloathes from under her gowne, stripping her of them all, without leaving her as much as stockings or shooes; telling us that he did it, lest there remained any token to know her by, in case the body were by any means discovered. But the very act of seeing so naked a *Princesse* of so great merit (innocently condemned to lose both life and honour,) stamped such a compassion in the cruell mindes of those two murtherers, that as soone as the *Prince* was gone, they so gazed one the other in the face, as if their new affect had bene written in their foreheads, each of them with halfe-pronounced interrogations, expecting when his fellow would speake.

We held on our way a good while without losing sight of the *Prince*, in that we descended, and he ascended, making many a stand, to behold the progresse of our journey, of us diligently continued; but the two (not able to dissemble any longer) told mee flatly, that they would not imbrue their hands in the bloud of that *Innocent Princesse*. The same, my friends (said I) is also my desire; but what shall we doe then? If we leave her in the plight she is in, she will die of her selfe, if she bee not dead already; which if she be not, how shall we doe to save our selves? That thought troubles not us (answered

swered they;) If we returne, we are sure to come to some ill end or other, for the *Prince* will never thinke himselfe safe whilest we live partakers of a businesse of such importance, and will therefore cause us to be flaine, when we thinke least of it; doe you therefore what you please with the *Princesse*, and tell the *Prince* what you list of us, for wee are most resolute never to returne more to *Catalogna*: at which word they would have laid downe their burthen; but I beseeching them not to leave me so alone, they were contented to listen unto me, having in former times received of the *Prince* (through my hands) rich presents and great summes of money, which made them thinke themselves therefore somewhat obliged unto me. I cannot (said I to them) but commend your resolution, seeing it opens me the way to satisfie the compassion I have of this *Princesse*. What I desire is, that (she & you being safe) I may also without danger returne to the *Prince*, being that I have not with me means to live elsewhere, as ye have. Whereupon many things were proposed, but none resolved of; when espying foure mountaine Swaines or hillie-men, comming with a chaire made of light wood, wherewith they had carried downe some one, we thought best to lay therein the *Princesse*; but they, seeing a woman in such a plight, and so clothed in such a place, and among such men, refused to obey us; till at length constrained, partly by menaces, and partly by faire promises, they tooke her up, and carried her betweene them so maine a pace, that we (though disburdened) had much adoe to follow them; who asking us afterwards whither we would goe? Forth of all habitation, said we. By that time it grew to be night, found wee our selves a great way distant from whence we parted from the *Prince*; having with us (being men for such a piece of service well provided, for having no neede of an *Inne*) bread, wine, and other good things, wherewith we kept our men in breath, who come to the foote of a great mountaine among other lesser ones; we thought it best to lay downe our burthen in a solitarie place, and there to murther them for their paines: then made we as though we meant to pay these countrey fellowes, yet (being vnwilling, I know not wherefore) to kill them in that place; the presence of the *Princesse* (by us reputed for dead, there having not appeared in her any signe of life all that day long) carrying with it a strange unthought of reverence, we walked on with them, one of us taking on him to open his purse, and I, asking the name of that mountaine, and the way to the next place of habitation; till come a good way off, wee kild three of them, every one of us his man, which booted us not much, for that the fourth escaped, making us to follow running after him a great way thence, nor could we have possibly overtaken him, if his ill fortune had not (by causing him to stumble at a great stone) made him burst one of his legs, whereby we came easily to dispatch him away. This crueltie could not we (especially my self) by any meanes forbear to execute, because our apparent qualities, and habits, with a woman so strip'd halfe naked, and taken for dead, were sufficient

sufficient motives to stirre up curiositie in any one, to prie into our
 actions, learne them out, and report them. Returning backwards,
 it was not possible for us to finde out our first path; so as wearie
 with the tediousnesse of our long dayes journey, we sought out for
 a place to hide and repose our selves in, that night in the thickest of
 the mountaine, with order, that whilst two of us slept, the third
 man should watch; but so farre were every of us from taking any
 rest that night, that even that reposing our selves tormented and
 wearied us more than all the former dayes toile; whereby I came to
 know it to be true, that mischievous deedes are of themselves both
 executioners and tortures; so as I that never knew what testimonie
 of conscience meant, when I betraied *Don Eleimos*, began to have
 now a feeling of it. For of that (because there followed it no danger
 of life, and that I thereby obtained the benefit of the *Prince's* favour)
 I made small reckoning; judging that as a wicked *Prince* makes slight
 account of any inconvenience that stands betweene him and a
 Scepter, so ought also a Courtier to arrive to the height of favour,
 esteeme dissimulation, fraude and mischief, as prudence and good
 counsell. But the comparison in this case was too too different, in
 respect of the qualitie of the person, the project not treating of, nor
 tending to the precipitating of a man downe from the top of his
 fortune, for the setting of my selfe in his place, but to the murthe-
 ring of an Innocent *Princesse*; from whose death I was like to gaine
 nought else than perpetuall suspicions, assuring my selfe (considering
 the nature of the *Prince*) that I could by no meanes long shunne my
 fatall ruine; and that he would never rest till he had freed himselfe
 of such as were privy to this so important a secret, which made me
 grieve that I had not with me my Jewels, or so much money as
 might suffice me to accompanie the resolution of the other two.
 But now the day appearing, there was not one amongst us, that
 knew whether to goe, since that to returne to the *Princesse* was but
 lost labour, so as the thought thereof was of us already abandoned;
 for their parts, they were resolved never to come, where any newes
 might be heard of them; but I (whom avarice and ambition had
 deprived of all good counsell) was exceeding sorrie that I knew not
 how to returne backe to the *Prince*, and doubting lest some mis-
 chiefe would befall mee, if it should be knowne that the *Princesse*
 were not dead; I resolved at length to returne backe againe howso-
 ever, and to affirme for certaine that she was slaine, and then to take
 away with me such coine and Jewels as I had gotten and stor'd to-
 gether, partly of the *Prince*, and partly of others for procuring them
 his favour; wherewith I made account to live the remnant of my
 dayes commodiously, if not richly without being beholding to any
 man. Which plot of mine communicated unto the others, and by
 them approved of; we parted thence, toiling our selves to finde out
 some kinde of path, which we had never lighted on, had we not de-
 scried afar off one a foot, who descending the mountaine, and com-
 ming towards us was without spying us, discovered by us. When
 I, straight

I, straight knowing him to be *Calaplo*, was thereof exceeding joyfull, deeming it the happiest encounter that could possibly betide me; for I (knowing the cause of his going away, being my selfe the man that hatch'd the invention of sending him packing in that manner) hoped to bring the *Prince* good newes of his being slaine, (for we having at first concluded to deale so with him, did not execute it, for not multiplying of too many Ministers in the fact, and by consequence of dangers in discovering him, the rather in that we hoped, that he would for feare have kept himselfe secret.) Imparting the businesse unto my companions, they resolved to murder him, not so much to serve and please thereby the *Prince*; as for love of the Jewels and coine which I told them hee had about him. Wherefore as soone as we got to the path, we dogg'd him without being able to overtake him almost all the day long; In the end passing downe a deepe steepy bottome, and getting up another mountaine, he held not on his way one houres space, till he stood still, so as we might at our pleasure overtake him; and (comming stealing-wise upon him for feare of being espied) we might perceive him talke with some body as farre off, and in his speech heare him say (*Your Highnesse*) which gave us cause to imagine it was the *Princesse* he spake to; there we set upon him unawares, but found him so valiant, that (what by retiring, and defending himselfe) wee could never come once to fasten a blow on him, the difficulty of the mountaines steepinesse, serving him for a great advantage. And I, in the meane while, seeing how he had with a maine downeright blow cloven the head of one of my two companions, thought it my best course to leave him hand to hand with the other: their death little importing my ends, which was the life of the *Princesse*, or rather my owne, which without her death could not subsist: it grieving me too much to leave in an instant the fortunes of the Court, by me only assayed, but not fully tasked. Thus was I flattered by ambition, which prevailes more in an upstart, than in one (that being borne there) hath it hereditarie from his ancestors, and from the noblenesse of blood.

Being freed then from that pittie which was instill'd in me by my companions, I got me to the place where I had before seene *Calaplo*, to assure my selfe whether the same was indeed the *Princesse*, or that I was deceived; where I saw it was she indeede, and she also might well have seene me, if hindred by her weeping, shee had not in drying her eyes covered them with the sleeve of her gowne, her good husband not having left her any thing else to drie them withall. The seeing her then in such a plight bred in me such a compassion, as made me (quite contrarie to my intended resolution) desire to comfort her; but remembring how she would never have either beleev'd or trusted me; and that it was better to goe and finde her out, crave her pardon, bring her backe to her father in safetie, and there leave her; I descended the hill; but could by no meanes possible (for all my rambling about) ever finde her out; so as at length
(having

(having also sought her the day following to no purpose) I resolved to set my selfe on the way of my returne.

The *Prince* in the meane time had in this tragedie plaid his part with exceeding great artifice; for returning to the Temple dropping wet with sweat, making a shew of being (as he was indeede, though for a different cause) profoundly afflicted, sent folkes to search all there about, for his wife; taking on him to feare, that shee (losing her way) were devoured of some wilde beast; he sent first of all to the *Inne* to know if shee were retired thither. But the Knight that was left there with the sicke woman comming thereupon up to the Temple, and acquainting him how that *Calaplo* had bin there to fetch away the waller, he began to display and ground on that act of his, some token of suspition; but when such as were sent aboade returned without any newes of her; then told he them openly that he could beleve no lesse, than that she were runne away with *Calaplo*, which he knew how to represent *so feelingly*, with such naturall affects both of grieve and disdaine, that the Knight (whose imagination never dived to the depth of so foule a treason) could not otherwise chuse than be of the same opinion; nor could it indeede be otherwise conceived of any, except of such as lighted pat on the very truth; seeing that neither bloud, nor any relique of any limbe of hers could possibly be found any where; albeit the mountaine was (for three dayes continuance) search'd all over with most exquisite diligence. Besides that (in that part so well frequented) was never seene any savage beast, much lesse was it ever heard that any one was ever slaine or hurt there. The *Prince* with this occasion came to be discovered (for so would he have it,) to the end that the fame of the accident might forerunne his arrivall in *Barcelona*, and so for being afterwards conformably confirmed by him, be the better credited; which indeede succeeded him every way answerable to his expectation.

The King well deeming that his heavy-hearted sonne had neede of comfort, sent of the gravest and wisest of the Realme to meete him; when he taking on him to be incapable of any comfort, spake and did things with such an extreme compassion-meriting passion, as there was not any that grieved not for his grieve. For albeit by the qualities of the *Princesse*, there was no reason to beleve, that any such a resolution could ever be fostered in her, yet could he so cunningly dissemble, that for some while he blinded the best sighted and most penetrating eyes. My returne was neere about the same time as his, though a little sooner, for so had we before agreed on. When I, in taking on me at Court to have never heard any thing of these passages, in wondring at such an accident, in making as though I could not beleve it, and in such other circumstances, wanted little of going beyond my Master himselfe, yet to him told I that we had buried her a pikes depth under ground, satisfying with all the rest of his demands at full, I having studied by the way how to make answer to all whatsoever he could aske me: but he that now

could finde no more in his heart to fix his eyes on me (my very presence upbrayding him of the foulness of his fault) never spake to me more one word thereof.

Soone went I about preparing my selfe for my flight, when hee faining to have heard some inckling of the *Princesse*, went suddenly a-board a Galley, so as I was faine to doe the same; where we were scarce settled a-board her, when among the Knights and Ghing was spread a rumor, that we were bound for *Affrique* to steale away the *Princesse* of *Maiorica*. Of this good plot knew I nothing, for the *Prince* beginning to grow cold in his favours to me, wards, favoured another (perhaps) worse yet than my selfe, at least in that behalfe, that he could not conceale a secret, wherewithall his Lord trusted him; which he telling in confidence to a friend of his, and that friend againe to another, soone occasioned our almost utter ruine.

We incountred (as it pleased the gods) by the way the *Prince* of *Mauritania* (your Highnesse brother) with whom the matter past ill for us. In that fight remained I wounded, endeavouring either to die or regaine the *Princes* favour; not with an intention to enjoy it long, but onely to assure my selfe thereof, till such time as opportunity presented me occasion and place to run away; it grieved me exceeding that I lay so wounded as I was not able to helpe my selfe, now that I might have made use of so fit an occasion for my purpose.

The King of *Maiorica* (after the departure of the *Prince* of *Mauritania*) considering how little it stead him to detaine in that sort *Don Peplasos*, and too withall that sithence he was to set him at libertie, his fairer course was to do it, with giving him as little disgust as possibly he could, (after he had given his daughter notice of it, thereby freeing her from danger, in case *Don Peplasos* resolved to returne thither againe) he went himselfe in person to visit him, referring it to his owne choice whether he would go or stay. Whereupon he as soone as he had dispatched himselfe thence having by making by the way enquiry, easily found out the Author of the rumor spread a-broad, caused him (in his owne presence) to be hang'd up by the maine yard. Arrived at home, scarce were his wounds cicatrized or begun to close up, when he (on the same pretext as before, with an excuse that his wife was retired to *Pegno della morte*), embarked himself; taking with him foure Galleyes, wheron it behoved me to mount a-board too, (wounded as I was) resolved to run away (at any hand) as soone as we should be landed in *Affrique*. Where what afterwards befell us, is already knowne unto your Highnesse: whom I humbly beseech to intercede some remission for me, since that it better beseemes the Lady *Princesse Eleina's* royall brest to pardon, than it ill befitted my base heart to offend; protesting before the Immortall gods, that in all these evils, my offences shall never grow so high, that they left not rooted in my mind a feeling sorrow for having committed them, neither did I (as I hope for mercy) commit them out of any despight or malice, but meerely for that ambitions

ambitions sake, that hath in every man such power, in causing him to desire to engrosse to himselfe his *Prince* his favour, wherein we have no example left us of any man, that could ever yet (in that kinde of avarice) content or temper himselfe.

To these last words of his, *Polimero* could not without disdainfull anger listen, and beholding him earnestly he excused *Don Eleimo's* judgement, for that *Catasco's* countenance and demeanour was able to deceive the most penetrating & subtilest understanding. Once was he about to make him no answer at all, his person not meriting any, but observing to be there present, many of the principall Courtiers, he (desirous that this example might serve them for a document) thus said unto him;

Catasco, the Historie I heare of thee makes thee knowne to bee unworthy of what thou cravest, especially those arguments aggravating thy fault wherewith thou pretendest to qualifie it. Thou wouldst have the *Princesse Eleina* pardon thee out of her greatnesse, what thou hast offended out of thy basenesse; not considering how that *Princes* are obliged to punish malefactors, not to doe sacrifice to their particular revenge, but for the publike weake's sake, the people being much better bridled by example, than swayed by lawes. Nor indeed can she, as a *Princesse* justly pardon thee; for though that all her miseries had ended with her death, yet the mischiefs and miseries that had thereon ensued, or that may yet proceede therefrom betweene the *Arelatan* and *Catalognian* kingdoms, might or yet may be perpetuall, with the death of thousands of innocents that might, or yet may perish by thy meanes. Moreover, thy being in the act it selfe sorry for having offended her, makes thee the more unworthy of favour; for it is no marvell if the blinde fall that hath no bodie to leade him; or that a franticke man under the conduct of his corrupt imagination, throw himself down headlong from any precipice, but for one of a perfect sight to fall and reall so foulely, and for one that hath a reflux of knowledge, and beene admonished by conscience, to precipitate thy selfe so dangerously and wilfully as thou hast done, is a thing altogether prodigious; nor can a man judge otherwise of thee than that thou intendest whensoever thou didst any mischiefe to doe it irrevocably without the consent either of reason or conscience, an evident signe of an accomplished malice, never to be repealed with any kind of good inspiration whatsoever; nor am I ever a whit induced to beleeve, that it was repentance which made thee, (when from on high thou sawest her drying her eyes with the sleeves of her poore gowne) to thinke of succouring her, and of bringing her home to her father, for that was not an effect of a repentant spirit, but of a minde already vilified in the consideration of its proper danger that thou incurredst with thy Master, for the life thou couldst not deprive her of. And this made thee (thinking on thy own miseries) capable of that pity which thou hadst not whilst thou wast void of such impressions.

Men of a shallow judgement, looking no farther than the appa-

rances, take those to be vertues that are not, whereas the wiser sort examine the actions, distinguishing that which really is from that which seemes to be. Which that it is so, thou maist see by thy selfe, for thou betrayed'st not thy Master first but with premeditation; nor the *Princesse* afterwards, but with deliberation, and yet passed there betwene these two treason plots, dayes and moneths; wherein thou hadst time to kindle the coles of charitie towards the one and the other, if there had beene remaining in thee any sparke of vertue; but thou diddest it not till thy foreseene miserie joyned with the danger, engendred in thee this adulterate pittie, if it may be termed pittie, and not rather basenesse & diffidence of being able to save thy selfe any other way. Nay, I beleeve what is yet worse (nor can I beleeve otherwise of such an one as thou art) that thou (seeing thy self undone) thought'st with a new invention of malice to winne her to be thine, after thou hadst left her to her selfe, and to make the instrument of thy life and good fortune, her, whose death thou had'st plotted, & whose miserie thou mean'd'st to accomplish by taking from her her honour, to no other end than to oblige her unto thee with a strange kind of benefit directed wholly to thy own sole ends, which also might have accordingly succeeded thee, considering the noble inclinations of so excellent a *Princesse*. But the gods permitted thee not to put that project in practise havingd estined for her safetie other meanes than thy malicious pittie, which because they in thee abhorred, they blinded thy eyes and clouded thy understanding, for finding her any more; nor doth thy last alleaged excuse (that the ambition of the *Prince* his favour was cause of thy offence) decline any whit from thy other reasons; for if we ought not to doe evill that good may come thereof, how can we excuse that evill whence springs another evill by many degrees greater?

The impossibilitie thou interest of the never being of any man that could in such like ambitions containe himselfe, is most false; whereof though I yet granted thee that there were not any, yet will I never concede that there cannot be any such. A *Prince* his favour is acquired either by merits, or else by reason of the inclination of the *Prince* himselfe; and where merits are, there is seldome any great fortune, for they proceeding from vertue, those vertues cannot brooke fortune, but disdain her means, and she again seeing her selfe so despised, scornes and contemns them; where inclination is, there resides fortune also, but diversely; for many *Princes* are good, & have good inclinations, but with them have they also their affects, which they will have humored; yet should they not be therefore abhorred, seeing they are but men, nor should they be condemned or much blamed for chusing persons to their fancy and liking, so that the State suffer not thereby. True it is, that such as these shall be by so much the neerer a fortune, by how much the farther off they are from integrity, except when the *Prince* his meere liberality enricheth them out of his owne, without prejudicing any other. But such as are cald to favour to be instruments of the wicked to the ruine of the
good

good (as thou wast) are not of this number, but of a third degree as detestable, for being in the extremitie of evill, as is that of the good desirable, that marcheth in the fore-ranke of goodnesse; so as I beleeve that (among all men in the world) thou onely art in that degree, and as such an one unworthy of either excuse or pardon.

Much amazed remained *Catafco* at this so rigorous though just judgement of *Polimero*, which ended, he was reconducted to prison where along time he continued without any hope of pardon or releasement.

Eromena having passed over into *Corfica* and taken *Bonifacio*, march'd on to *Sagona* which yeelded it selfe to her mercy; with the same felicitie tamed she the *Talsines*, acquired *Telisano*, the valley of *Vasina*, *Giovellino* with whatsoever other places are contained in *Capo-Corso*. *Nebbio* that was then the citie and seate Royall made her some resistance, the Rebels being reduced thither, and most resolute to defend themselves till death; which they had performed, if the inhabitants had thereunto consented: which later weying with themselves the losse they sustained by *Polimero's* valour, and considering withall how scant their provision was growne, yeelded on reservation of the safegard of their lives and goods: whilest the Rebels seeing the people so inclined, saved themselves by timely flight in *Balagnia*.

In the meane time had *Polimero* (long before) sent the Count of *Bona* to the King his father, that he might (when he had given an account of his embassage in *Maiorica*) obtaine an other for *Sardagna*, to demand in marriage for him *Eromena*, wherein he was with such expedition dispatched as *Nebbio* was scarce rendred up, when the *Princesse* received letters from her father, with newes of the arrivall of an Embassadour from the King of *Mauritania*, about a businesse of so great importance as it necessarily required her personall presence, wishing her therefore to leave good order for the enterprise, and to hie her selfe thither with all possible speed.

Vpon this *Eromena*, well knowing what the businesse was, though loth to part from her lover, posted away, leaving all the troopes in his charge, taking along with her the *Marquesse* with the principall Commanders of the Campe, to the end that the whole honour of the conquest of *Corfica* might rest entirely his alone. Nor was she therein deceived, for *Polimero* (desirous to bring his enterprise to an end, and above all to get into his hands the Rebels) came before *Balagnia* so suddenly and unexpected, as they had no time to get out, as they made account to have done, any tentative of theirs serving them to no purpose, for that the citie was walled round about, so as it was soone given up, and the Rebels consigned him alive. This done, he tooke *Calui* with all its territorie, nor remained there now other than *Genarca*, which because of its being seated on the sea, had not so easily beene forced, if he, by bringing thither the Fleet, had not constrained it to follow the fortune of the others. Afterwards having embarked the Rebels on the *Mauritanian* Gallies he commanded the Admirall to deliver them from him to the King.

King. As soone as *Eromena* was come the King told her, the occasion for which he sent for her, was, for that the King of *Mauritania* had sent to demand her in marriage for his sonne *Polimero*. She (making as though the matter were strange to her) answered, that shee would doe what should be by the State thought fitting, referring her selfe wholly to the Councell. Now those of the Councell come with her from the Campe were fewer than those others of the Court, and approved of the marriage, acknowledging for chiefe of their side the *Marquesse* of *Oristagnio*. But the *Marquesse* of *Bossa* (being uncle to the *Count* of *Montevero*) endeoured by all meanes to crosse those nuptials, making with the kinsmen of the Rebels so strong a voice, as that but for the others authoritie, he had easily hindred it. His reasons were, the disparitie of their yeares, his being without any patrimonie, his having made many principall houses in the kingdome his enemies, with the imprisonment, and consequently the torture and death of so many Barons, which though it were done on a just ground, yet was not justice able to give every one satisfaction. And though that prudent *Princes* ought to aime their levell at reason onely when they reape no prejudice therefrom, yet if they see any likelihood of the contrary, then ought they to second the passions of their subjects, who being potent in a state might otherwise trouble it, they presupposing the justice done to be faulty, to bee a generall injury to their blood, whereof in respect of the number of such as were innocent, there should be a speciall care taken, not to contaminate the honour of some, in the punishing of some others. Nor can the government be supportable of a *Prince* brought in with the blood of so many, who for being necessitated to leade a life full of jealous suspitions) cannot be beheld otherwise than with an evill eye by the kinsmen of such as were by him delivered up to the hangman: that his Majestie should consider not so much whether what was proposed were reasonable, as whether the same were profitable or no. And on the contrary; if the sole reason were for its being prejudiciall to him; true it were that just *Princes* should desire the execution of justice, though the whole world came thereby to perish; but that this case required no such justice, for in denying *Polimero* the *Princesse*, we (said he) neither wrong him, nor take from him ought that is his, whereas by giving her him, we should wrong the Realme by endangering it, and take from it what is its owne by depriving it of its peace, there being many spirits that cannot brooke the government of this *Prince*, though (I confesse) in all other respects worthy.

The *Marquesse* of *Oristagnio* could not without indignation heare out this Oration, wherein he discovered many heads of great consequence. Rising up therefore on his feete, and concealing to himselfe what he conceived of it, he answered to his objections. That the disproportion of yeares was not a disadvantage to be calculated betweene *Princes*, it bringing no prejudice to the maine principall; which also if it were to be calculated should be rather objected on

Polimero's

Polimero's side; that his being without patrimony was that which was of them to be sought after, to the end that his affection might not incline to any other state or country than that of *Sardegna* (here gave he thē by the way a touch of his supplying the want of a patrimony by the conquest of *Corfica*, & of the obligation that the crown owed him therefore.) That the enmitie he incurr'd with the Barons should serve & much availle for the amplifying of his deserts, so as he much wondred at their inducing for an exclusive argument, that which above all thing else expressed his worthinesse; that the rebels kinsmen were known for *Cavaliers* of conditions so noble, as would not without any cause hate *Polimero's* person; and though they were such as would wish him ill, howsoever, yet had they no reason for his sake to hate the state, and so prefer their particular enmity before the publike benefit; which if it so were not, and that therfore those nuptials caried with them some apparance of danger, yet should there not be thereof any reckoning made, seeing that *Princes* ought in every state to maintaine the priviledges of their dignitie; which they doe not when they lend an eare to all manner of privie whisperings, by listning wherto they come at length to be drawn to condescend to any thing, even to the putting down of the crown, and renouncing the government; or to beare the scepter, and govern, not as a King, but as a subordinate magistrate depending on the will of others. True it was that the people ought to be hearkened unto, & that in matters of law and justice, the *Prince* ought to part from his own opinions and cleave to better judgments; for which purpose were counsellors and councils ordained, which were otherwise superfluous and vaine; but yet that in matters absurd and unjust he ought to let them see, that he knowes how both to conceive and punish offences; making it thereby appeare to every one, that his taking of counsell sprang not from defect, but from excellency of judgment, which is to the nature of a *Prince* more particularly adherent, than any other condition whatsoever, that the punishing of the guilty was to be imputed no more to *Polimero*, than to justice it self; which if it should be therfore hated, then might we in such a case grant, that he might also with reason be stomacked; that his comming to the principality could not prove insupportable to other than ill-minded men; his steps of ascending thereto being grounded, not on the bloud of any of the nobilitiey and their demerits, but upon his own bloud and *well-known* deserts; nor was it to be doubted that he would become suspicious, & so by consequence cruell, seeing that the rebels kindred either approved, or not approved of their misdeeds, which if they approved, they then made themselves accessaries to the same fault; if disapproved, they could not chuse then but approve of their punishment; nor was it lesse strange to say that their honour remained blemisht by the others punishment, as if we would beseech *Jove* not to let the Sun shine on any uncleane thing, for feare of polluting it selfe therewith; but if they still insist, that their honor is thereby contaminated, let them then tell mee what is in their judgement fit to bee done, and whether the murthering of ones

Prince, and betraying of ones countrey, merit impunity and reward? Furthermore hee denied that the rule of just and profitable had the supposed distinctions, which though they had, yet could not that any way stand them for the present purpose. In fine, he concluded, that none but traitors could either refuse or oppose this match being both just and lawfull, which he offered (besides arguments) to make good with the sword. Much amazement in the audience bred this resolute speech of *Oristagnio*; and little wanted the *Marquesse of Bossa* of being seconded, when he excusing his speeches with much humilitie, and the King being unwilling to be entangled with new garboiles (feare occasioning such effects in him, as it useth to doe in such as thinke by suffocating evils to make them sheere away) the matter was wholsht up with the conclusion of the marriage.

Well perceived the *Princesse* how her father erred with too much facilitie, but seeing it could not be remedied; she with *Oristagnio's* counsell resolved to call the prisoners to be put to death before the publication of the marriage, and returne of *Polimero*, thereby to free him (as much as in her lay) from the imminent hatred of the Barons. That which in this designe of hers troubled her most, was the person of *Epicamedo*; she ballanced all those reasons that made him become worthy of death, with that one sole regall qualitie of his, which gave the scales such a shake, as it was impossible to find means or counter-reasons to condemne him. Most inconvenient seemed it also to proceede against him by a judicious way, as against private persons, by nature, law, and oath subject to the state. In deciding this point were many dayes consumed, with no few arguments of both sides. After which was resolved, that for one borne free, a King and a Sovereigne, to live a prisoner, deprived of a kingdom, and subjected to the charge of a Iaylor, was no small punishment: howsoever that his *Reale* was well gotten from him by the common rule of nature, which teacheth us to repell force by force, not so much by a title of war, as because it was a warre begun by him, who became a refuge to traitors, an entertainer of rebels, and a fosterer of the murderers of *Princes*; with an example tyrannicall and prejudiciall to himselfe, if it had fortun'd him to have continued in his royal estate: nor were all those dangers that were proposed to be likely to spring from the keeping of him alive, able to remove *Eromena* from her innate clemencie; who onely kept him secure under the charge of a faithfull garde, whereof there was no great need; for he having understood of the losse of his kingdome, and of the resolution taken touching his person, growne furiously mad thereat, and wanting wherewithall to kill himselfe, ranne his head at the wall with such a horrible force as he therewith dash'd out his braines; for the others were prepared new wayes of torture, as pinsers, sheares, hot irons, and fires: but the *Princesse* thereto consented not, leaving such inventions for hellish furies, contenting her selfe that they (though worthy of all torments) paid the law its due, and satisfied by example the necessitie and publike desire of justice, which was executed with

with so great a concourse of spectators as that the field was not capable to containe so great a throng. The Traytors dying all of them penitent of the offence, except the obstinate Admirall. In the meane time was the *Count of Bona* held in suspence (almost two moneths space) without receiving any publike answer; being nevertheless well informed of its occasion, and sumptuously entertained. The newes being afterwards come of the totall possession of *Corfica*, and *Polimero* desiring there should be sent thither a Vice-Roy to governe it; a generall assembling of the states of the kingdome, was resolved of, to which end came together the feodatories & deputies of every one of the Cities and Provinces. The first thing in that Parliament decreed, was the *Prince's* funerall exequies, which were celebrated with such an orderly pompe, as that they might with more reason bee termed triumphs; there not appearing other lugubrious object, than the habit and affection to the deceased *Prince*. There were to be seene the representations and modell of sacked cities, battells won, people tamed and vanquished, of Kings and Giants taken and led captives, of wilde beasts trampled downe, and monsters slaine, the liberalitie used towards the vanquished; the giving of cities and whole kingdomes, not for avaritious but for honourable ends; the Virgins preserved and the women cared for: the dangers of the land and sea, voyages and discovering of new regions. In summe all whatsoever could in such a subject bee imagined for the expression of his a thousand-fold happinesse, if there had not (among so many ornaments of glorie) violently beene inserted in the minds of the beholders the occasion of his death.

At the second fitting was in solemne forme established the incorporation of *Corfica* to the kingdome of *Sardegna*, with a law of never alienating it more for any occasion whatsoever. Some there were that would have their lawes and priviledges quite abolished, but thereto would not the *Princesse* absolutely consent, thinking it best to see first how they demeaned themselves, who though conquered by force, should not be for that respect worse used than before; being fallen not through their owne, but through their *Prince's* faultinesse, whose remembrance should bee defaced out of the peoples hearts by good vsage and continuation of favours; rather than by harsh usage, and withdrawing of favours to give them cause of endeavouring to regaine their former freedome. As for the lawes, she well knew their abolishing to be necessarie, being that a body cannot be formed of two soules, and those different; and would therefore have the *Sardan* lawes serve for, and be common to both kingdomes; nominating the *Marquesse of Oristagnio* Vice-roy of *Corfica* with generall applause of the universall assembly.

There being propounded afterwards at the third fitting the demand of *Mauritania* (not for obtaining of consent thereto, but to have it confirmed by counsell) upon recitall of *Polimero's* merits,

and of the conquest of *Corfica* there was not so much as one that gaine said it.

The *Marquesse* of *Oristagnio* parted suddenly, to the end *Polimero* might come to celebrate the marriage. Now he had received daily intelligence from his *Eromena*, the *Marquesse*, and the *Count* of *Bona*, of all that was done in *Sardegna*, wherefore though he were desirous to dispatch himselfe thence, yet waited he with all patience, the orderly proceeding of his affaires, conformable to the necessitie of the times, setting in the meane time the places he had gotten in such order, as they might be easily conserved; fortifying every place, whose site or necessitie required it, having a speciall eye to the assuring of the ports, but chiefly to the remotest from *Sardegna* in the face of *Liguria*. So as when the *Marquesse* came, and found all things so well settled, he said, that *Corfica* might well be kept without his government; it being so well ordered, as it was impossible for it for a long time to fall into any disorder. Arrived in *Sardegna*, and as its *Prince* revered of every one, he came to *Caleri*, met with great pompe and extraordinary applause; where having kissed the Kings hands, he would needes doe no lesse to *Eromena's* also, the presence of the multitude prohibiting them to embrace one another according to their internall amorous affects, so as they greeted each other with outward apparances, according to the stile of convenient ceremonies.

The King for all these rejoycings never once joyed at all, but the more he observed his sonne-in-law in his actions resemble his sonne, the more he felt his heart rent with the memorie therof, which he so loved, as for it he disloved every thing else not excepting himselfe.

Polimero's first resolution was to licence the *Mauritanian* forces, wherewith he well pleased the whole kingdome; he re-sent them enriched with the pillage of *Corfica*, and therefore passing well contented, sending backe also with them all the Fleet, except the Galleyes, which he sent for *Metaneone* to come to his marriage; and he by entreatie of his father and mother-in-law, got leave to bring also along with him *Eromilia*. Having then ship'd themselves (after they had by a Fleet-Galley sent their brother word of their comming) they sayled the two first daies with prosperous windes; but were the two following greatly troubled with Southerly windes, so as they had much ado to keep in the maine, from crossing over to the *Gaulan* coast. But the winde increasing and blowing with extraordinary furie, they having lost their direct course, were driven into the *Lygustike* sea, without being able to touch the Iland of *Corfica*. The sweet *Eromilia* found her selfe heart-sicke, being unable to taste any sustenance; sore was she troubled with vomiting, so as having nothing in her stomack, she cast up the very pure bloud, to the extreme grieve of her husband, who would willingly have died rather than have seene her so languish. He had once hoped to come by some meanes or other to strike on the *Corfan* shore, but seeing himselfe transported beyond *Capo-Corso*, he commanded to take the winde in

in poop, and to runne a-shore on the neereſt place of landing.

North-ward from that *Cape* ſtood a little diſinhabited Iſolet, where having with much adoe caſt anchor, they preſently ſet a-ſhore the *Princeſſe*, who no ſooner touched land, than that there came to meeete her a white fawne, which gently licking her hands, ſeemed to kiſſe them for her welcome thither. No ſmall delight tooke *Eromilia* to ſee ſo timorous a creature growne ſo domeſticke, ſo as forgetting her paſſed feares, ſhee cald for ſomething to feede her withall; whileſt ſhe (gentle thing) taking the bread (as it were for good manners ſake) out of her faire hand, and then letting it wantonly fall (as needing it not,) continued in cheriſhing her, and (as farre as could be comprehended) in inviting her to goe along with her, for having walked eight or tenne ſteps ſhe would looke backe, and ſeeing her ſelfe not followed would returne againe, doing oftentimes the ſelfeſame thing.

Metaneone, who was paſſing glad to ſee his Lady take pleaſure in a beaſt, that ſeemed to participate of reaſon, imagined that this Iland might be one of thoſe, wherein was beleevd to be by authentick relations the tranſmutation of men into beaſts; but yet keeping his thoughts to himſelfe for feare of inſtilling of new feares into the minde of the *Princeſſe*, he prayed her to give him leave to follow that Deere, ſithence that ſhe ſo evidently thereto invited him; which the *Princeſſe* would not aſſent unto, aſwell becauſe ſhe was loth to be without his company, as alſo for that ſhe beleevd not, that theſe actions of the ſilly beaſt contained in them other myſterie, than the content of her owne nature. But obſerving her continue them, and too withall grone, as if ſhe grieved to be diſobeyed, ſhe permitted him to goe.

The Deere ſeeing her ſelfe now followed, went on a little further, but no ſooner perceived ſhee her ſelfe not followed by *Eromilia*, than ſhe came running backe to her amaine. Whereat ſhe (marvelling, and deſirous to know the iſſue thereof) cauſed her ſelfe to be carried after her. The gentle beaſt led on a round pace, making ſometimes an obſervant ſtand as if ſhe meant to give time to be overtaken. And gotten out of the ſight of the ſea, ſhe entred into a little, but very pleaſant valley; where (ere ſhe had gone two bow-ſhoots on) ſhe ſtood ſtill before a poore cottage, lying at the foote of a rocke, ruſtically built of earth and ſagors; at the doore whereof ſtood playing with little ſtickes the beſt featured and faireſt child that ever humane eye beheld; his age was about three yeares, his body covered with a rich habit, and his countenance clothed with a no leſſe commanding than majeſtickall phyſiognomy. This ſweet boy ſeeing ſo many folkes, ſtood looking on them awhile, and then ſuddenly neglecting them, and turning to the fawne-wards (that plaid ſkipping and hopping round about him) he ſtroaking her, made very much of her, and ſhe of him.

Whileſt thus *Eromilia* (having forgotten all paſt diſcommodities) ſtood with her lookes fixed on them, there came ſuddenly to them

a Knight with a crossebow in his hand, and many birds in his fowling-bagge, who (having espied the Galleyes) had left off his fowling, to come running to his lodging; his clothes (though not very good for being much torne) were all of silke, garnished and curiously embrodered over with gold; he seemed to be about five and and fortie yeares of age, and had an aspect noble and courteous; his followers were no more than one servant not very young, with a bow and a hare on his necke. Both of them changed their colours seeing *Metaneone* with so many folkes; and looking one upon the other, seemed with their eyes to expresse some great matter. The fashion of their habits was very strange, quite differing from those of neighbour regions, which descried them to bee of some remote countrey.

Eromilia impatient to stay till they would speake, seeing them so in a maze, said unto them; My friends, I beleeve that this unexpected sight of us, breeds in you no lesse astonishment, than the seeing you in so solitarie a place hath stirred up wonder in us; but if your taciturnitie spring from none other roote than from that of admiration, in that you expected no such guests; then I pray you to forgoe it wholly, for we are not persons to doe you any injurie, but rather to pleasure you and doe you all the courtesies that lie in our power. Please you but tell us who you are, and whether this babe be your sonne, or that *Iove* (fearing his jealous wife) hath given him you to keepe, to the end that he, being so reserved, may in time doe such exploits, as might be expected from such as are descended from celestiall Deities.

The Knight, who at first sight had not placed his eyes on other than *Metaneone* and his Knights, (because *Eromilia* exceedingly delighted in the babe was gotten to sit downe by him) now observing her, and contemplating the appearances which denoted her greatness, he with a more settled countenance, said unto her; *Madame*, I cannot denie but that your comming into this strange and disinhabited place, strikes in us some admiration, this little Iland not being inhabited of other than us alone, nor frequented but of such as are winde-driven hither, whether they will or no. Here see we never any other than Marriners and Fisher-men, poore creatures, I will not say guided by fortune, but going to seeke their fortune. Your qualitie seemes to us much different, so as by reason of the diversitie of ours, we cannot (in seeing you) tell what to judge thereof; when therefore it shall please you to let us know who you are, we will not faile to obey you, in what you command us, nor would we without great reason request that favour of you.

Sir Knight (answered him the *Princesse*) if that can satisfie you, there shall be no let in us to worke your satisfaction. This whom you here see, is the *Prince* of *Mauritania* my Lord and husband, the other our Knights; my name is *Eromilia* the King of *Maiorica's* only daughter, borne with a naturall instinct to helpe men of merit, as you seeme to be; hither are we come driven with the violence of the windes, and for no other reason. The

The Knight (having already understood their cases by some poore folkes that had beene there, casting a-side his crossebow) would have kissed their hands ; but not being permitted so to doe, especially by *Metaneone*, he besought them to enter in with him into his poore Caban, where he promised them a part (in private) to satisfie their desire. Already moved they themselves onwards to follow him, when there appeared from the Fleet in seemely order a great number of servants with divers dishes of meat *and delicate cates of all sorts* ; which the Knight perceiving, and comprehending by the tempest of the sea, that yet continued, what the matter was, hee (laying aside all suspition, which the sudden apparition of such a number had bred in him) said unto them ; May it please you (excellent *Princes*) to give your bodies some comfort, ere you content your mindes with the curiositie of our fortunes, the deferring whereof cannot so much trouble you, as the delaying of recreating and restoring your bodies after your past sufferings must needs prejudice you.

Whereupon the *Princesse* (more for the desire she had to rid her selfe of the company, than for any appetite) tooke some refection ; the *Prince* doing also the same ; entertained with the sweet demeanour of the noble babe ; who neither caring for, nor yet despising the cates they gave him (though most delicate,) expressed a Royall gravitie in the povertie of the place, farre from such pettish wantonnesse as is usually in that age common to all children ; he disdained not *Eromilia's* affectionate kisses, but being well pleased with them, would with a kinde of a sweet willingnesse meete them as they were comming ; her he contemplated, examining with a suspence of spirit, all her parts, her speech and gesture ; observing her with admiration, not as a thing strange unto him, but out of a judgement mature enough to know her merits. Impossible it was to perswade the Knight to taste of any thing, who notwithstanding wanted not discrete manners and humble language, to defend himselfe from their enforcing courtesies ; something he accepted of, which were onely such as he saw liked by the child, of him respected not as a sonne, but as his Lord.

By this time had the *Prince's* servants pitch'd some tents in the selfesame valley farre from the sight and roaring of the sea (for such was the command of the *Princesse* ;) in one of them dined they, passing away the time there, till the Knight having dined with the others, and the tables taken away, they licensing for awhile their traine walking on towards the Caban ; where entred in, they marvelled at its no lesse strange than rare architecture, for that which seemed to be but a cottage, was in appearance no other, but in effect served but to limit a secret and hidden dwelling. And to make no shew of what was therein, there stood placed in it two poore beds of greene leaves and boughs of trees, with a poore hearth and a homely chimney, which made such as came in, beleeve there was nothing else. But opening a doore (that seemed to be a wall closed fast

fast to the rocke, built to keepe off its moisture) there was an entry that led into a hollow vault of a soft mouldrie stone, under the superficies of a rocke, which was divided into two partitions of lodgings; in the principall of them stood a square Hall with two faire lodging chambers and one backe chamber: In the other lodgings were servants beds, sellers, wardrobes, and other places and store-houses for necessarie provisions, which might there be seene, not onely copious, but also singular in their severall kindes, and to illuminate the one and the other, stood placed in the midst of them, (compassing it in forme of a Crowne) a little court formed by nature in the very rocke, which by degrees opened it selfe to its very toppe with such a well-observed proportion, as art seemed to have lent a hand thereto. And because the raine trickled by severall channels downe to the bottome, there was formed an ample cisterne to receive it, the place being in its superior part inaccessible, and therefore unknowne to any.

The Hall (we speake of) was all hung with filke hangings of texture not seene before in *Europe*, being rich, strong, of various colours, incapable of spot or staine; and withall so lively as the reflexion of the aire from them, made the place more lightsome. The chambers adorned with cloth of tissue, had placed in one of them two beds of the same sute and fashion, in one whereof lay the child, in the other the Knight: their furniture were all pretious, no side thereof wanting either rich curiosities, or riches, worthy (without curiositie) of the greatest Monarch; the tables were of silver of finest workmanship; the livery cupbords of gold inlaid with rich pretious stones, with houre-glasses of the same, but that the gold was brought to be of an inestimable value by the quality of the gems and orientall pearles inlaid therein; that which made up this wonder of rare curiosities, was, when betweene the two lodgings divisions, was opened a doore covered with arras, where-through was an entrance leading into an odoriferous Chappell dedicated to the gods, whose Images were little, but all of massive gold, and so resplendent with the abundance of so many Jewels that served for fringe to the rich tapestrie wherewith it was hung, as there is not any King in the world that can boast of a treasure equall thereunto. In the midst of this Chappell in six faire lampes of most pure gold, burned a pretious liquor, whence issued an odour so pleasingly sweet and delicate, as passed all fragrancy, dispersing it selfe over all the house to the great restoring and ravishing delight of the senses.

So astonished were the *Princes* to see such an excellencie of rarities, as they could never have their fill of beholding them; which to observe well would require a great deale of time, whereas that little time was taken up with varietie, the varietie with curiositie, the curiositie with art, and the art (being inimitable in all his parts) with its owne excellencie, so as the intellect (fixing it selfe, while on one, and while on another wonder of matter and workmanship) was carried about with a perpetuall motion, from one to the other, remaining

remaining aggrieved for his being unperfect to judge of them. The hangings of the Hall (though but of silke simply) possessed (perhaps) some parts more worthy of contemplation than all the other riches, not so much for that they contained the maps of some countries done with all those exact proportions as are possible in art, as because they were fringed about with purple, its silke being died in the blood of beasts to us unknowne, representing the naturall colours with such vivacitie, as there was not any money that could counter-value them. No other thing had bin able to have removed the eyes of the *Princes* from beholding of these such eye-ravishing objects, the like whereof they had never seene before, than the longing desire (increased also by these circumstances) which they had to know the story of the babe; whom *Eromilia* having taken on her lap, and affectionately cherishing with a motherly tendernes, praid the Knight to acquit himself of his promise, whereunto he shewing himselfe obedient (as soon as they were sitten down) spake in this forme.

Some eight yeares may be expired, sithence there chanced to come to the kingdome of *Arabia the happie*, the *Prince of Artacana* the youngest amongst the sonnes of the King of *Parthia*, who for his noble conditions was growne so famous, as there was not any *Princesse* or *Queene*, that hearing of him desired not to see him, and seeing him, desired not to have and enjoy him; so that he whilest he lived a Knight Errant, had more adoe with his love to satisfie women in their affections, than to succour them with his valour, which in him was more than ordinarie. There reigned then in *Arabia* a right noble *Queene*, that had beene some two yeares a widdow, a woman of exquisite beautie and extolled modestie; no sonnes had she, but in their stead seven daughters, the elder whereof bred up with hope of succession she had then newly married to the *Prince of Susiana*, which marriage occasioned the comming thither of the *Artacanan Prince*, who borne to the exercise of armes and in them bred up (upon the bridegromes invitation) came thither to honour his friend, and to make his fame by exercising of his person grow still more famous in the world, the affect of honour being somewhat a-kin to that of gold, whereof the more one hath the more he covets. It were too long to relate unto you the feates of armes he there performed, only I must tell you that valour, beautie, and bodily feature (qualities without paragon in him) held very ones minde in suspence, to judge whether they overcame or were overcome of courtesie and other vertues seated in the minde, which (though internall) twinkled forth sparkles that argued great flames of excellencies, not to be extinguished by any other humour whatsoever. The *Queene* who was then young (being not passing foure and thirtie yeares of age) grew to be so ardently enamored of him, as no one place could long hold her; nor were the considerations of her being mother to so many daughters, & Lady of so many people, sufficient to extinguish this ardor of hers; but (like some combustible matter sprinkled over with oyle) she burned more vigorously when she

lighted on any reasons contrary to her desire. This o! this was it which made her neglect even her sleep and food; dragd by amorous furies a different way, she strove to defend her selfe from being conquered, and in the victory the excessive paines she tooke to obtaine it, weakened her forces against the succeeding battell. Shee shunn'd the sight of him, and yet was sicke to see them, and being so sicke, would willingly have died, for not living sicke perpetually, in that her modestie permitted her not to sue to him. In the meane time he (both honoured and beloved) held correspondencie with all, which he well knew how to doe; nay, it had gotten in him such a habit, as that he could not chuse but doe it. When he saw in himselfe any qualitie that he perceived to be in the Queene, he would joy thereat. It grieved him much to see her retired, judging the feasts and sports obscured by the privation of her presence, and that her griefe alone was an universall contagion to the Vniverse. He went to see her, and grieved so to see her. Their language was not common (such having no place in persons of singular vertue) but accompanied with an internall affect of pittie, followed with a sweet faintnesse of the heart, and waited on with manners Royall, and an expression able to captivate the most obdurate minde; forcible enough it was not to batter (for the breach thereof was made already) but to raze to the ground her constrained resolution, her losse making her know she was too weake to resist so many engins and so potent an enemy. At length because her modestie consented not to the giving up of that Fort unto any, whichever till then she had conserved, she deemed it her best course rather than to lose it, to yeeld it up upon honorable conditions; wherefore retiring her selfe into her selfe, and summoning her thoughts before the privy Councell of her consideration, she came to see, that it ill-befitted not her age and beautie to take to her a husband, and too withall that the *Prince of Artacana* (being her equall. ~~thought~~ not his fathers heire) was no inconvenient match for her. With this comforted, and resolved, (leaving her bed) she appeared at the solemnities with an excellent beautie, waited on with so rare perfections as engendred envy in her sex, but reverence and love, or rather a reverent love in any lover of beauty, luckily borne under an amorous influence.

The *Prince* at that time exceeded not the age of foure and twentie yeares, too young for the practice of the world, but not for the experience of love, that grew so fixed by affection (which by little and little was a building in him) in all the gestures of the Queene; as it was no difficult matter for him to perceive the fire that the fuell of his love maintained in her; but yet doubted he of being beguiled, for albeit he might assuredly have builded on the foundation of his owne merits; yet modestie (one of the vertues that embellished him) made him charie in judging the best of himselfe, and much more in censuring the worst of others; being that such inclinations could not without some declination of honestie be presupposed to be (as he conceived in any woman whatsoever. An opinion sometimes

times false, but ever discourteous; which argument of his was farre from the thought of mariage, knowing himselfe much younger than her, and she not onely a mother of a numerous off-spring, but also likely to be shortly a grand-mother; wherein although he thought not himselfe deceived, yet determined he not to give himself over for all that as a prey to desire ere he knew that he were certaine of his hope.

The dayes of those feasts were for the most part spent in feats of Chivalry, *masqueradoes*, shewes, dances, and huntings; and the residue in journeying: for seeing that the whole kingdome, would needs partake thereof, it was the Queenes pleasure, that the foure moneths destined to that end, should be stored amongst the foure royall cities, which were *Omano* the Metropolitan citie placed in the midst of the Kingdome; *Zabra* situate (as it were) under our *Tropicke*; *Saba* in the extremitie of the *Arabian* creeke, and *Carma* beyond the *Sudmaritan* mountaines; nor was the time spent in iourneying reckoned in this account, because every of them would needs feast their Queene their full moneth out, lodging and entertaining her Court with all its followers, without any charge at all to the Exchequer. By which occasion also all such strangers as were flocked thither, saw all that part of the kingdome, where grew the aromaticall and sweet-smelling spices, which is in the *Sabeian*, *Mineian* and *Scalaitan* quarters, to such passing recreation of the senses, that such of them as had beene professed travellers, protested, that they never gusted the pleasantnesse of any journey with such a ravishing content, as humane sense might imagine it held conformitie with the divine essence, excepting this onely, the odors of *Myrrhe*, *Incense*, and *Balsome*, (in the place where they grow, and where every one may with his hands gather them) farre surpassing the odors of the same simples transported any where else. the very aire there, being also situate under so fortunate a clime, as it breathed naught els but sweet odors, nor distils other than right pretious balmes; nay more, the impartiall-seeming Sun which in the same paralell in other places melts and kills, there vivifies and recreates. And the hew of the inhabitants countenances which in *Arabia* the desert, (though many degrees more northerly) are gloomie and swarffee, are here nevertheless cleere and lively. If then among the pleasures of so delightfull a climate, among the commodities of a terrene Paradise, amongst the allurements of feasts & revellings, and occasion of journeyings love had not commoditie, passage, and place to lodge it selfe in, we must needs beleve him to be rather deprived of judgement, than hood-winked.

The marriage was celebrated in *Carma*, a place for all the neighbouring parts most commodious; there ended the Queene her moneth, and there also shooke she off her sicknesse.

The Prince of *Artacana* grew to be extraordinarily altered from what he was wont to be, to the no small griefe of the Prince of *Susiana*, who for having invited him thither, thought himselfe obliged to entertaine him in such manner, as melancholy might get no seat

in him, he oftentimes would aske him what ailed him, when the other putting on a merry countenance, strove to conceale with its occasion the effect thereof. The *Prince of Susiana* sought every way to procure his content, and thinking that the conversation of Ladies might delight him, he had no great a-doe to frame a Colledge (as I may say) of the fairest of them, whereof some in stead of recreating and curing of him grew by him to be infected.

The Queene (having with an amorous prudence examined all things with her selfe) aimed rightly at the occasion of his alteration; so as she glad thereof, began to hope for some good issue to her desires; but yet (desirous that the matter might be first broken, either by him, or by some other accident) she had the patience to expect the occasion of parting thence.

Now to goe to *Omano*, they were to passe the mountaine in a chaire, at the foote whereof were to stand ready their coaches. Descended then from the mountaine, the Queene (under pretext of the great heat) would have none in hers but the two younger girles; whereupon the *Prince of Susiana* (who desired to be alone with his bride) came to her and told her, that there was no coach for the *Prince of Artacana*, nor was there any provided for him, because it was thought her Majestie would have honour'd him with a place in hers. She excusing her selfe for not having thought of it, taking him by the hand made him come and sit by her of one side, causing the two little *Princesses* to passe over to the other.

This Queene bare in her countenance (placed there by nature) an awing Majestie, whereby though she had not beene borne a Queene, she would have beene reputed for such, for that she seemed with it to teach reverence and respect. The *Prince* (docible in such like disciplines) learn'd them in an instant. ^{but unlerned} himselfe; for losing his colour and green (as a man suddenly oppressed with a great fit of sicknesse) he remained deprived of all motion. The Queene (intending to enquire of him how he liked her countrey, seeing him now in so profound a maze, laying aside the faire colours which she carried in her countenance, and borrowing of his pale and bloudlesse hew) said hastily unto him; What is this I see, My Lord? Are you sicke, and yet conceale your maladie? Doe you take mee (perhaps) to be so discourteous as not to deferre my journey for your good, if your health so required it? Vpon which words she intending to bid the coach returne; the *Prince* (revived with the sound of that voice with his eyes big with child of a captivated pittie, a weeping discoverer of his amorous disease) return'd her this answer.

Madame, I beseech you by the same courtesie, by whose meanes my imagination is by you made innocently guiltie, not to breake off for me your intended progresse; I cannot denie my selfe to be sicke, though my disease be of such a nature that the more rest it hath, the more it increaseth: there is no other way for me to overcome it but by suffering, which although it cannot be cured, yet should a Knight
being

being not able to chase it away, endure it the best he may. For this occasion then, and not for any diffidence of your royall courtesie, have I conceal'd it, howbeit it was never so presumptuous a blab (though for all that mute) as now it is. True it is, that I must excuse it because it seeing no possibilitie of being cured otherwise than by the hand of a goddesse, beleaving (and that peradventure rightly) that you are that deitie, hath made bold to invoke you. The Queene made no present answer, but after a short pause said thus unto him;

I never yet heard (My Lord) of a disease of that nature; and though I beleieve that the gods can (when they will) cure all diseases, yet am I somewhat dubious in beleaving, that such a cure be reserved, either more to the one than to the other, or to a goddesse rather than to a god; but though it were granted that it could so bee, yet how can your disease wanting the discourse of reason beleieve me to be a goddesse; or how can you say (that perhaps it beleieved rightly) knowing me for a woman?

That the gods (*Madam*) have divided their offices and government (replied the *Prince*) cannot (I beleieve) be doubted of: and this perceive we plainly in the visible gods; the one meddles not with the others businesse, be it either to helpe or hurt the things created; onely they may because of their benigne nature, with their aspects mitigate the evill effects of such, which being of a diverse nature thinke but of harming us. That a disease hath understanding though it want discourse cannot be denied, unlesse the naturall relation among creatures be denied also; for how doth bloud gush out of the wound of a dead corps in its murtherers presence, wanting discourse, nay (which is more) not having as much as sense? It must be then needs granted me, that all things either by power of an internall sympathy, or by relation (as we may say) of another thing to the same (in some manner) correspond^{ence}, may without understanding, understand, and without will, will. In that I therefore beleieve that my malady perhaps mistakes not it selfe in thinking you to be a goddesse I can say nothing, because I know not what to say. But the Queene solliciting him to make particular answer to this point, as he had done to the rest, (not by any means allowing of his excuses) got him at length to confesse unto her, that indeed his disease was love; but that the qualitie of his Lady was so divine, as that it deprived him not onely of all hope that his service would ever be accepted of, but also of all courage of presuming to make it knowne unto her, which he durst not attempt for feare of the thunder of her disdain, and that that accident had then befallen him, because his heart seeing her hold so great a conformitie in all things with the Lady of his life, and taking her for the same indeede, was moved to implore her gracious assistance; nor thought it it selfe deceived, as well because his Lady was a goddesse, as also because it could perceive no essentiall difference betweene the one and the other. The Queene, perceiving well what he meant, and yet resolved to get it plainly out of him, told him there was no Lady free, and

at her owne dispose that had cause to refuse the service of so noble and vertuous a Knight as he was, unlesse she were a married wife, such a one having indeed a good cause of excuse; whereto he answering her, that she was a widdow; she replied, that widdowes might lawfully re-marry. In fine, the end of their discourse was the reciprocal discovery of their affection, with the appointment of their marriage to be mannaged with such meanes as might best besit her modestie and credit; a conclusion that wrought in their hearts extreme content not to bee changed for the possession of the whole world.

The overjoyed Queene now assured of the affection of her beloved *Prince*, grew fairer every day than other, and come to *Omano*, passed there right happily her destinated moneth. Faine would the *Prince* have written unto his father to send him thither forthwith Embassadors to demand her; whereunto she (with whom love prevailed not so much, but that modestie prevailed yet more) would by no meanes consent; to the *Prince* his so great torment, as he thought himselfe unable to support it. Whereas she founding the fact with more maturitie, considered that the world (omitting the considerations of her being both a woman and young withall, and therefore subject (as others were) to common passions) would have said that she married onely to spite her daughter.

The feasts ended, she licenced him with all the rest: he having all that time so behaved himselfe, that though hee were enamored, young, and full of fire, yet was there not any that could take notice of his pretentions; and although he served her with extraordinarie diligence and that in tourneies he carried her *Impresa* and favours, and that shee did him besides the publike favour to terme him her Knight; neverthelesse the opinion of modesty in her, and discretion in him being great, suffered not tole his demeanors to bee deemed other than ~~of~~ ^{of} Chivalrie, and of service due rather to a Lady than to love.

Come home, he communicated his designe to the King his father and to the *Parthian Prince* his brother, who assoone as they had understood of the *Prince* of *Susiana's* returne home with his bride, were not slacke to send to the Queene a noble embassage, which they willed to be expressed in presence of the Councell. The obstacles in this businesse were three; all of them of moment, whereof the least was the quantitie of daughters; of the other two the lesse important was the jealousie and by consequence the enmitie of the *Prince* of *Susiana*; the last and greatest of all was the danger of stirring up rebellion in *Arabia* the desert, whereof her late husband (the father of the girles) having beene naturall King, it was to bee doubted whether that people would ever obey a new King in prejudice of the *Princesse* of *Susiana* their legitimate Queene, as her, who of the daughters was the eldest.

To the first was answered, that a male being more convenient and necessarie to the Realme than a female, and a naturall home-borne

borne native more fit than a stranger; the mariage of the Queene was approved to be, not onely laudable, but necessarie.

To the second, that the *Prince of Susiana* (being the *Artacan Prince* his friend) had no reason to dislike of this alliance; and though hee were more wedded to the hope of that kingdome, than to its *Princesse* till then presumed to be heiresse; neverthelesse there was not by this match any thing of his taken from him, because there having beene neither promise nor mention made of giving him the kingdome for a Dower, hee was not bereft of the hope of having it, in case there sprung not from these nuptials any heires male; and if he would not be thus satisfied with reason, yet was there no cause to feare him, considering the greatnesse of the kingdome, the valour of the *Prince of Artacana*, and the force of the *Parthians* apt upon any occasion to invade *Susiana*.

To the third, finding neither reason nor pretext, was said, that it lay not in the *Queenes* power either to give her new husband the title of King of the other *Arabia*, nor yet (in case she married) to retaine it her selfe, it being not hers, but her daughters; adding, that as they besought her to marrie, that so she might give them a lawfull Lord; so desired they her to be also pleased in the selfe same time to cedethat kingdome, to whom it of right descended.

With this the marriage was concluded on, and the kingdome of *Arabia* the desert granted to the *Prince of Susiana* (who, for all the inviting that he and his wife had to come to the celebration of the marriage would by no meanes come;) and *Artacana* proclaimed and crowned King of that Realme with generall applause and public satisfaction; but little could shee or the kingdome enjoy him, for within foure yeares time death tooke him away in the fairest flower of his yeares, & in the greatest expectation of prowesse that might be hoped for of any *Prince* of that age. Grievous then above all griefes was the griefe of the more than grievously grieved Queene, insomuch as no perswasions could prevaile to take out of her armes the dead corpes, her often swoounding kept her alive by making her become unsensible of the sharpenesse of the paine which shee felt, without which shee had irrevocably accompanied him. But (alas) 'twas not here that her misfortunes ended; for having left her by her husband two babes, the one a boy (which is this here) and the other a girle; there was stirred up (a little after the Kings death) an insurrection in the Realme, in the favour of the elder *Princesse*. In that time were the *Parthians* troubled by the *Medes*, and our King (when he sickned) was about to goe in person to the aid of his father, who hath by this time (I beleeve) made an end of losing his state and whole Dominions. *Susiana* seeing himselfe therefore assured of his, on that part, and withall rid of a competitor; having with gifts and promises made up a strong faction in his mother-in-laws kingdome, thought by laying hold on this occasion to become absolute Lord thereof. Of his first motion the Queene was not much affraid, either because, she having by the losse of her husband

band beene accustomed and vsed to the supremest of evils had no feeling of lesser; or for that shee relying upon the having of a male-legitimate heire, cared little therefore, but gave her Generall commission to goe pacifie the insurrection.

These Rebels with the greatest part of the other Barons who (whether it were that they scorned to serue a babe in his swathing bands, or for any hopes of better advancement, under a King great of State, and well stricken in yeares) accorded to receive him; whilst he with a great army quartered on the confines of the two *Arabiaes*, resolved he would be declared apparent heire (after the Queene) of that kingdome, excluding by name *Coralbo* (for so is this unfortunate child cald) in spight of all such as opposed him. Very few were those that stucke to the Queenes side, all following the fortune of the sonne-in-law, with the pretext of the *Princesse*, by this time fruitfull of three sonnes; so as the poore distressed Queene counselled by necessitie, was faine to forgoe his sonnes title; but perceiving though too late, that this could not make up her good sonne-in-lawes content, and that *Coralbos* life was that which he aimed at, shee sent him to the strong castle of *Cardamina*; when he waxen wroth to see him so repriv'd from his barbarous crueltie, unmasking himselfe now, and promising his sisters-in-law with great Dowries to many *Princes*, had the heart to deprive his mother-in-law of her kingdome; the death of his wife giving him occasion so to do, who whilst she liv'd would never consent either to the deposing of her mother, or the death of her brother. Established then with the title of his sonnes; the deposed Queene (of every one pitied too late) considering how that *Cardamina* (whither she was retired) could not be long able to withstand the Tyrants force, calling me unto her.

Setiro my beloved Cozen (said she) I know you conceive the miserable estate whereunto fortune hath reduced me, I am now without either husband or kingdome, and am also like enough to bee shortly without a sonne too. In such losses as these (for which I should have died) I have conserved my selfe alive, to the end that at every new breathing I might lively feele them all: my kindred and servants have all forsaken me, you onely (deare Cozen) have left and lost all to accompanie and comfort me, so that it is not the least among my griefes to know the disproportion that is betweene your fidelitie and my present state, for not being able to reward you, yet will I neverthelesse give you so efficacious a token of my gratitude (though the receiving of it can bee to you but a great trouble) that you will confesse it lies not in my power to give you more, in the case I am in at this present. With that, taking the child, and laying it in my armes, she stood a good while without opening her mouth, plung'd in a sea of teares, till at last she said unto me, This is that, which I promised you, the sole Relique of my felicities and onely comfort of all my losses and miseries, which I must lose to my selfe that it be not lost to the world; here is no place for him
(poore)

(poore *Infant*) no King or Prince, to whose trust I may commit him; you onely dare I boldly trust him with. Vpon this (rising off her seate, and I following her with the babe in my armes) she led me into a great tower, where we found so much riches, Jewels and coine, as I remained thereat astonished, opening unto me afterwards the places shut up, and my wonder thereat increasing; Cozen (said she) I would bid you take all that you here see, if the carriage of it would not endanger you; take therefore all that you thinke may stand and serve you, yet must you make account that what you take, must (without any more) be the patrimonie of my poore sonne, and the stay of your loyaltie, my selfe not knowing either what shall become of me, or whether I shall ever find any meanes of sending you any more. And as she was about to tell me somewhat touching the education she would have me give him, she was seazed on by so great a flood of teares, as her unfinished conceits were by her sobbings limited with this onely, Doe you.

Whereupon I (transformed into her griefe, though most unapt to comfort her) strove (the best I could) to speake something to her; but she soliciting me to depart with such speedy earnestnesse, as if the Tyrant had beene at the gates, I went and chused out of the treasure what liked me best, and taking up the babe got me to *Arsinoe*, where landing in a Merchants habit, having with me the riches signed up in diverse packs with merchants marks, I passed to the *Nile* depending on it at my leasure to the sea, where boording a good ship, I sought for a settling place over all the *Mediterranean* Ilands, but being winde-driven hither, and finding here a great heard of goats with this Deere amongst them, I wondered to see her so gently fawne upon me without any feare at all; so as I judging this a fit place for my purpose, called it (because of the goates) *Capraia*; and finding this mouldrie stone easie to be wrought, I sent for workmen from *Liguria*, who in a short time made me the house you here see, wherein I will doe my best to conceale this disinherited Prince. I brought along with me three right faithfull servants, one my owne, the others given me by the Queene; but because I never wrote unto her more than once from *Arsinoe*, I sent her (some three moneths sithence) one of them to bring her newes of us, not so much for discharge of my dutie as to know what state she now is in, and to see, if there be any likelihood of any hope of our returne; wherein if there appeare an impossibilitie, I intend to continue here, till such time as the child grow to be able to exercise horse and armes; by that time, suspicions ceased, my selfe growne aged, he well growne up, and both of us altogether unkend and quite forgotten, I will endeavour to bring him elsewhere, that fortune may not together with his kingdome deprive him of those fruits the world is like to reape from his (truly Royall) inclinations. And this (excellent *Princes*) is all that you desired to know, which I beseech you to account as not spoken; nor had your Royall dignities beene sufficient to have made mee become thereof confident enough, if your

aspects carried not engraven in them the merits of your vertues worthy to be the cabinet of so great a secret.

Eromilia hugging the babe close to her faire breast, with kissing it a thousand times, could not containe her selfe from weeping; faine would she have praied *Sotiro* to goe along with her to have him bred up in her Court, if she had thought to have obtained him; which proffer she and *Metaneone* both made him, with expression how desirous they were thereof, but he humbly thanking her, told her, that he would finde a time to come with him to see and serve her. The three dayes that the tempest lasted, passed the *Princesse* pleasantly on this Rocke, with the sweet-pleasing company of *Coralbo*; which expired, shee (commending him to the gods) departed with her husband.

In a short time arrived they at *Caleri* met by *Polimero*, and well-comed by *Eromena*, conformable to the dignitie of their estates and communitie of their affections; whence they could not part for many dayes after the marriage, although the King of *Mauritania* had by often messages solicited their returne; till at length *Polimero* also, (desirous to pay the tribute of the dutie that he owed his father) having gotten leave of his father-in-law to take along with him *Eromena*, they (accompanied with *Eleina*) went on their intended voyage for *Mauritania*, where being arrived, they were received with such pompe and joy, as greater can not be described.

The old King seeing his sonnes thus well match'd, and *Polimero* so well provided for and settled, joyed for the hope he had to see issue from them a faire posteritie, which hee was so fortunate, as to see spring from both of them: for *Eromilia* about foure moneths then after was brought to bed of a boy. Whilest *Eromena* knowing her selfe to bee with child, thought to returne home, being sent for by her father; but the intreaties of her parents and brothers-in-law were so importunate as it was not possible for her to returne, and the Embassadors sent thence to *Sardegna* got (with much difficultie) leave for her to stay there somewhat longer; her time being come, she was brought to bed of a daughter, whose features were both so faire and manly, that the sight of her bred no lesse delight than wonder in the hearts of all that saw her. And too withall nature it selfe (which in ingendring amazement proceeds with unaccustomed meanes) now in her operations exceeded her ordinarie bounds, for two or three nights before her birth were heard all over the Palace and through the streets of the citie a pleasing murmur, as that of voices and instruments, that carried to the eare an unusuall sweetness of harmonie; beguiling many, (who went through the lodgings to seeke for it) with others who went out of their houses, thinking to finde it abroad.

The day shee was borne on, there was no man that minded his owne businesse, but every man (drawne by an unknowne affect) forsooke his shop, whilest the sacred temples shone with sacrifices and devout worshipping. Never was there scene over all *Afrique*
a more

a more temperate day, or a more sweetly-warming Sunne than was then; Orange, Lemon, and Cedar-trees that never budded before, now blossomed abundantly, yeelding at that birth their fruit in all maturitie and perfection. The gentle Dolphins ranne sporting themselves nimble in the sea, chasing to the land whole armies of fish, which the inhabitants tooke with no lesse joy than amazement: an old well or deepe wintch (that at first was sunke in the castle of *Birsa* for the commoditie of the Garrison, and was (for being found afterwards with salt water in it) dedicated to *Neptune*) boild all the night long, becomming in the following morning so sweete, as it excelled in goodnesse the best waters in that Countrey.

Full glad was *Eromena* to heare of such things, acknowledging her thanks to heaven for doing them in the favour of her girle. Congratulations she received not as a woman in child-bed, but as a Captaine vanquissant of a battel. Many times and often kissed shee her sweet babe, who without either crying or weeping, beheld steadfastly the faire light of the world; by no meanes possible would the sweet little one endure the swathing bands, but would with a lovely fiercenesse push them off her. No other dugs would shee touch, saving those of her mothers; wherein though they thought to beguile her (by *Eromena's* holding her in her armes, and others reaching her a dug,) yet she informed by the instinct of nature would shut up close her pretty mouth, chusing rather to die for hunger than to be nurst with other milke than her mothers. She would (by all meanes) bee obeyed in all things, and faine were they (whether they would or not) to let her have her will, to the passing content of her grand-parents, leaving at her parting so great a longing after her, as the expectations from her exceeded that of all the girles that ever were borne in *Africke*.

Polimero with his *Eromena* departed thence, leaving every one sad for their privation; who arrived in *Sardegna*, settled themselves to the ordering of the Realme-affaires. Whose strange adventures and rare feates of chivalrie, together with other things in this Booke unfinished, shall be writ in the Story of *Donzella-desterrada*, or the *Exiled Virgin*.

FINIS.

a more temperate day, or a more sweetly-warming zone than was then. Orange, Lemon, and Cedar-trees that never budged before, now blossomed abundantly, yielding at that birth their fruit in all manner and perfection. The gentle Dolphins ran sportively themselves nimbly in the sea, chasing to the land whole armies of fish, which the inhabitants took with no less joy than amazement. An old well or deep winch (that at first was sunk in the castle of Bay for the commodious of the Garrison, and was (for being found afterwards with salt water in it) dedicated to Neptune) boiled all the night long, becoming in the following morning to twice, as it excelled in goodness the best waters in that Country.

Full glad was Eusebius to hear of such things, acknowledging her thanks to heaven for doing them in the favour of her girl. Congratulations she received not as a woman in child-bed, but as a Captain and victor of a battle. Many times and often kissed she her sweet babe, who without either crying or weeping, beheld itself fairly the fairest light of the world; by no means possible would the sweet little one endure the swathing bands, but would with a lovely fierceness push them off her. No other dugs would she touch, leaving those of her mothers; wherein though they thought to be-guile her (by Eusebius's holding her in her arms, and others tea-ching her a dreg) yet she informed by the instinct of nature would shut up close her pretty mouth, chafing rather to die for hunger than to be nursed with other milk than her mothers. She would (by all means) be obeyed in all things, and tame were they (whether they would or not) to let her have her will, to the passing content of her grand-parents, leaving at her parting to great a longing after her, as the expectations from her exceeded that of all the girls that ever were borne in Africa.

Followers with his Eusebius departed thence, leaving every one sad for their privation; who arrived in Zairena, settled themselves to the ordering of the Realm-affairs. Yet strange adven-

tures and rare fates of chivalrie, together with other things in this Book unfinished, shall be writ in the Story of Doncella-d'Alvares.

or the Exiled Virgin.



